

Forced gangsta love

## INTRODUCTION

I was walking with sne she was telling me abt her long term boyfriend thy both cheat so it's fair.

Me :same cc old same of tomm...."MLUNGU"(that was our school famous hoe she always teases me she was coming with her group two of her team are my cousins )

Jessy : u should come sit with me in class.

Me :OHkay (thy left)

Sne :what does she want now.

Me :dnt knwl'm gonna find out.

My name is Kourtney Trecia smith but my grandmother calls me ndoni'yendalo.

People call me MLUNGU because I have long curly blond hair ,blue eyes light skin tone my granny colours my hair every month and bought me black contact lenses to fit in cause I was bullied I always plait or do pony tails with my hair I dnt leave it flowing my gran says I hv my mom's looks and body I I'm slim and short u have an ass thn tiny waist flat stomach.

[07/04, 11:18] W: CHAPTER ONE

.

.

KOURTNEY

Many children my age are probably planning what they will be doing for their holidays where as,as for me I will be spending most of holidays helping Gogo who happens to be a maid in one of the BnB around East London.

There is not much I can say about my self other than having big blonde curly hair which I dye

black and my blue grey eyes which I wear contact lens, you guys are probably wondering where my parents are will my father was a married who happened to have an affair with my mother who happens to be black, my mother thought that my father will leave his family and start of with her but sadly that was not the case my so called father left my mother after finding out she was pregnant with me he wanted nothing to do with her. My mother gave birth to me which was a curse cause most of her siblings wanted nothing to do with a mixed race child the last time I saw her was when I was two years old it's been 16 years since I last saw my mother, there are times when I blame myself for being the reason of her departure but then again Gogo always tells me that my mother had her own reasons. The only mother I know is my grandmother whom I love with every being in my heart. She means the world to me there is no other first lady in my heart other than my

Gogo,the Queen of my heart.

She is the reason why I wake up and work hard each and everyday even though there are times when I want to quit due to the bulling at school but then I remember that I am not doing it for myself but for my granny I want to make her proud,she has sacrificed a lot of things such as having her family leave her when she took me in.They say they want nothing to do with a "bastard" child

.

.

We live in a two bedroom house even though it's not big but at least I have roof over my head.

.

.

I was busy enjoying my beauty sleep when Gogo started calling out my name she knows I am not a morning person

Gogo:Ndoni wake up we are going to be late

Me:Five more minutes please mama

Gogo:You do know that I am totally against you coming to work with me especially today out of all days we are having guests and the BnB has been rented out by this rich tycoon business man who is throwing a bachelor party for his friend which is why we can't be late you know how Bosszilla can be at times

Me:(laughing)You also using that name wow  
Gogo

Me:I don't mind helping you out it's my job to take care of you remember what the doctor said you should be resting instead that evil boss of yours wants you to work after falling on her steps

Gogo:As I said before I am totally fine it's not like I broke my back,you need to stop worrying about me

Me: You are the only person I have in this world my mother didn't want me, nor did my father and now even your children don't visit all because of me (tearing up)

Gogo: Oh baby it's not your fault, that they want nothing to do with you, to me you are a blessing and don't worry I am still going to be around by the Grace of God I am going to see you graduate not only that I am going to see you get married to your prince charming speaking of which do you have a boyfriend?

Me: This is so embarrassing no I don't and I don't need one remember you always say God before boys, books before boys because boys bring heartaches and pregnancies.

Gogo: (smiling) I am glad you remember my teachings now hurry up we're running late and don't worry we are getting a lift from Bab'Dlamini

Me: Is there something that I should know about?

Gogo: Get out of that bed and stop having dirty thoughts

She then walked out of my room laughing, nothing makes me happy than seeing my grandmother smile I really want to see her smile if Bab'Dlamini makes her happy then I am happy.

.

.

The drive to Gogo work was very pleasant Bab'Dlamini kept on making jokes on our way to work, luckily the Bosszilla has not checked in.

I left Gogo behind for she was still talking with Bab'Dlamini I made my way to the basement where most maids meet and as always there is Gladys who always been a busy bee who likes interfering in other people's business, you would think she is old just because her name makes her sound old but she is 20 turning 21 in two days

Gladys:Look what the cat dragged in

Sam:Gladys can you leave the child alone what is wrong with you,instead of bullying someone your age you find pleasure in bullying the poor kid

Gladys:Mxm and you(pointing at me)stay out of my way make sure you stay in your lane...The big bosses are mine

Sam:You should go back to school Gladys stop this thing of yours and it's not up to you to decided where we will be working it's up to Ma'Ntuli(Gogo)to sign us up for our work stations

Gladys:We do know that she is going by sign in her sweet grand daughter so that she can be seen by the men in this BnB

Me:I don't mind been in the toilets the whole day I am used to cleaning them

Sam:See there it's sorted there was no need for



you to be mean to her Gladys

Gladys:Yeah right now if you ladies can excuse me I have a blesser to charm see yall

She walked away swinging her hips I really don't know why Gladys hates me so much I mean she has the body to die for and I on the hand am simple plain Jane

Me:Why does she hate me though

Sam:Don't mind her she feels threatened by you that's all

Me:(shocked)Really but I have nothing on her she has a body to die for I must say her skin is flawless well I on the hand am just plain

Sam:You really don't know how beautiful you are,Ndoni you are every mother's dream you have what most women envy and I am not talking about your outer appearance but rather your inner.

You have what she does not have and that is

inner beauty,never in my entire life have I meet someone who is selfless and loving as you.

Me:Wow thank you give the credit to the Man Above and of cause Gogo

Sam:Please girl don't cry on me now I want you to do me a favour

Me:Name it

Sam:Just for today can you remove your contect lens I want you to start embracing those beautiful eyes of yours

Me:(smiling)Just because you made my day I will do as you ask..so do we have any rude guests today

Sam:Aaaaargh there are these rude guys who are occupying the whole 4th floor to be honest I so wish that Ma'Ntuli does not assign us to that floor

Me:Are they really that bad?

Sam:You have no idea,they are rude not only

that but arrogant at the same time

Me:Let me help you since Gogo hasn't arrived yet

Sam:Where is she by the way

Me:Downstairs with her boyfriend

Sam:(laughing) You mean Bab'Dlamini

Me:(laughing)Oh my gosh how do you know him

Sam:They spend of their lunch breaks together

Me:They should date already

Sam:Let's get to work so that we will gossip the whole day

[07/04, 11:18] W: CHAPTER TWO

.

.

TYRESE

Me:You guys need to wake up before the room

cleaners get here

Ben:Where the hell are we Tyrese?

Me:Ben can you just wake up

John:Where are we Tyrese it seems like we are far from Joburg hang on a sec is that the sound of an ocean

Me:Yes we are in East London after your last job we had to hide out here if it was not Benjy who wanted more instead of sticking to the plan(shouting)now I had to get you guys out now the Purples are out there looking for you

Ben:Look I am sorry Tyrese I know it was not part of plan...where is Bonnie oh my gosh she is dead

Me:Can you calm down Bonnie is well and fine she is just visiting her family she will come back in two days now get up we need to go

John:I know for the fact that you hate being being away from your kids

Me:Speaking of which I need to step out and give them a call when I come back you guys better be ready and make sure that you hide that stack of cash we don't want to cause unnecessary drama

Ben:Where are we going to hide so much money and where the heck are the diamonds(shouting)

Me:I SWEAR BENJY IF YOU SHOUT ONE MORE TIME I WILL BLOW UP THAT SMALL BRAIN OF YOURS

Ben:Okay okay I am sorry

John:I thought that the plan was to steal cash only not the diamonds where the hell are the diamonds Ben

Me:Both of you calm down I have kept the diamonds in a safe place now if you can excuse me I need to call my kids

.

.

I made my way out of the room leaving these two dummies alone, one thing I hate about being in a gang is that you leave without saying good bye to your loved ones. Speaking of which I am a father to two beautiful twins Travis and Tyrella who have just turned six last month..as much as I am no longer in a relationship with their mother I am glad we have a civil relationship towards each other for the sake of the kids.

I dialed her number after answering on the the fourth ring

Millie: You do know that some of us are still sleeping at this time

Me: I wonder who is going to marry you

Millie: Last time I checked you were a suitable candidate until you broke my heart

Me: I thought we were passed that in fact I didn't

call to talk to you,where are the kids

Millie:They are still sleeping you know Tyrella was crying the whole night

Me:Why?

Millie:Don't tell me you forgot yesterday it was your turn to have them

Oh flip I totally forgot it was one of our date nights

Me:Can't you guys come over to East London

Millie:What are you doing in East London?

Me:It's work related look I want you and the kids to come down here in fact start packing I will pick you up at the airport

Millie:Can I bring a friend with you do know that the twins can be handful

Me:Yes look I need to go now tell the twins I love them and don't tell them I want it to be a surprise

Millie:Okay baby daddy

Me:I don't want any baby mama drama Millicent

Millie:Roger that look I need to go now I will send you the details on what time the flight leaves

Me:Good than see you guys soon

As much as I don't want Millicent around she is the twins mother

.

.

After my call with Millicent I made my way to the dining hall that's where the guys were waiting for me

Me:Good hope you guys have placed an order

Ben:We were waiting for you...what took you so long

Me:I was checking up on the twins,they will be joining us in a few hours



Ben:That's means I should also call my wife she needs to come down with the kids I don't like the fact that she is home alone

John:I agree on that

Me:I guess we will be having a retreat there is only one person missing

Ben:Dave should we give him a call I heard that he resided this side after quitting

Me:We should pay him a visit before the fam arrive

Ben:I am going to call her after we finish exploring

John:Don't tell me you thinking of cheating on Yanda,come on Ben she just had your kids for crying out

Me:A man got to do what a man got to do

Ben:See why I prefer Tyrese instead of you...you need to loosen up John

John:No guys cheating on your partner is wrong I really think you should learn from his mistakes see he lost Millicent due to his cheating,you guys need to grow we are no longer in varsity where we used to sleep with girls for fun.

Now we are parents and you need start acting like one you Tyrese Travis is looking up to you and as for you Ben you have Thando and Yakhe looking about to you stop acting up like teenagers and start thinking about your kids

.

.

With that said he walked out of room

Ben:He needs to chill I am not planning on settling down any soon you know I heard that the East Coast is famous for having beautiful girls....you know bikini babe's

Me:(laughing)You will always be a player

Ben:You know what they say old habits die

hard,look man I want to say I am sorry for putting you and the others in danger

Me:It's cool it's water under the bridge as long as you have learned to work according to the plan,the plan is there for a reason to prevent things like these

Ben:So what now you do know that the Purple gang must looking around for us

Me:Don't worry everything is under control we have an inside man he will let us no if something comes up

Ben:I guess we should enjo this trip than...you know I think Shanell is pregnant John has been moody the past few days

Me:(laughing)He just needs some clubbing and everything will be fine

.

.

Oh my where are my manners my name is

Tyrese Gibson also known as "Dragon slayer" in the underground world,I am a chemical engineer by profession and just turned 30 years last month.

Walk with me on this journey

[07/04, 11:18] W: CHAPTER THREE

.

.

KOURTNEY

Since Gogo didn't sign me up as usual I ended up working with Sam who was a waiter for today since one of the waiter couldn't come in today,we were now at the kitchen dressing into our waiter uniforms

Me:Sam I don't think I can do this I mean I don't even know the menu

Sam:(smiling)Relax sweety you are going to be fine just follow my lead

Me:What if the customers are rude and I happen to give them a wrong order,I think I am going to have a runny tummy

Sam:Well you relax you are just going to be assisting me listen all you need to do is to smile and I will do the rest remember a customer is always right no matter how rude they are just walk away

Me:Roger that

Sam:(smiling)You look beautiful remember to smile

Me:(smiling)Okay

We made our way out of the kitchen I was following Sam lead,she then walked to a table that had three guys

Sam:Oh boy can't we serve other table

Me:What's wrong do you know these guys?

Sam:These are the guys I was telling you about earlier the rude ones who are occupying the 4th

floor,I just wish I was given another table...anyways come let's get this over done with

We slowly approached the table

Sam:Remember to smile

Sam:Gentlemen welcome to Safe Zone BnB can we take your order's

Guy 1:My name is John,this is Ben and Ty we have already placed our orders

Sam:Good than excuse us

Tyrese:We have been waiting for the past 15 mins for our food

why is it taking so long

.

.

As good looking as he is he has a bad attitude for days which is totally a turn off for me not that I am checking him out and his friends on

the other hand look good but they way over my league not that I plan on dating first I need to pass my matric then get accepted in varsity dating has to wait cause seriously I don't have time for a man at the moment.I need to focus on my dreams yes focus on your dreams Ndoni

.

.

Sam:Umh let me go and check with the head chef on how long your food will take excuse me

Sam quickly made her way to kitchen leaving me dumbstruck with these good looking guys yet annoying at the same time

Tyrese:Are you going to stand there get moving(shouting)your presence is ruining my vibe

.

.

Who the heck does this guy think he is,he not

the prince of England eshy these cheese boys  
who like to think they made it in life haysuka

.

.

John:There is no need for you to shout at the  
poor girl as the other waiter has explained she  
is still checking with the chef on how far our  
food is so please

chill

John:(smiling)Excuse my friend can I have a  
refill please

Me:Coming right up sir

I quickly went to the kitchen I prefer being a  
cleaner instead of being a waiter.

There is something that my grandmother has  
always taught me is this regardless of what  
rank a person can be whether they are in  
low,middle or high class treat them with  
respect,just because some people scrub floors



and pots for a living does not mean that they are of no importance. Treat people with respect in order for you to get respect in return. We are all equal in the eyes of God and He loves us all unconditional

I made my way back to the table seeing that Bozzilla was having a chat with the guys, it's possible that he has snatched on me, now Bosszilla is going to be a pain in my neck

Bozzilla: Ndoni these gentleman are complaining that their food hasn't arrived yet what seems to be the problem

Me: Ms Nceba we have kindly explained to the gentleman that their food will be ready in a sec

Tyrese: She has been saying that for the past hour

Me: Not trying to be rude but Sir an hour hasn't past and my colleague only left 5 mins ago there is no need for you to exaggerate

Tyrese:Wow Ms Nceba is this how you allow your staff to speak to your guests?

Bad service for me

you guys are going to get a one for this service

John:Tyrese can you please stop with this nonsense of yours you starting to act like a spoilt brat, act like a grown up I was expecting this kind of behaviour from Ben not you what is wrong with you

Me:(mumbling)He is a brat pity that he is a old brat

Tyrese:What was that?

Me:(smiling)Nothing now if you guys can excuse me there are other guests that need my service

Ms Nceba:Ndoni in my office now(shouting)

.

.

I made my way to Bosszilla office I know that I am going to receive an earful on how bad I acted today

Ms Nceba:Close the door

I did as I was told

Ms Nceba:What was that all about?

Me:There was no need for him to act like a spoilt brat mam,just because he looks better than us does not mean he needs to look down on us.People need to understand that we all have feelings and that we also get hurt

Ms Nceba:I really don't care about your humanity speech listen and listen to me carefully this my BnB and the rules say "the customer is always right",that man had the right to complain this is my ship and starting from today you are not getting any pay from this

Me:What?

Ms Nceba:You heard me clearly I am deducting

half of your salary reason being,you back  
chatted with the customer

Me:You trying to tell me that I will only get R250  
this is so unfair

Ms Nceba:Life is unfair now get out of my  
office you won't be waitering you are going to  
help Peter with the garden

Me:At least I won't deal with rude,self centred  
customers

Ms Nceba:Ndoni this is my ship so abided by  
the rules,I hope we won't have any problems are  
we clear?

Me:Crystal clear

Ms Nceba:You may walk out close the door on  
your way out

.

.

See why I call her Bosszilla anyways at least I

still have some pocket money left. I made my way to the kitchen I wanted to inform Sam about the incident, she entered the kitchen looking pissed

Me: And then what's with the expression?

Sam: I am this close to losing it Ndoni these guys keep on testing me

Me: Will my advise to you is don't react just let them be

I started to tell her about the incident that took place earlier on

Sam: Oh Ndoni you should have walked away now you lost half of your wages

Me: It's fine anyway let me get going see you at lunch

Sam: You better behaviour with Uncle Peter

Me: (smiling) He is my father that one I know he is not going to allow me to work

Sam:I so wish to be you right now,oh boy here comes Gladys

Me:Let me leave you know she is going to cause and I am really not in the mood for her and by the way lunch is on me

Sam:You don't have to

Me:I insist make sure you come with an empty stomach

Sam:Looking forward to it...let me go before Bosszilla comes back

[07/04, 11:19] W: FINAL SNACK FOR THE DAY

.

.

CHAPTER FOUR

TYRESE

John:What is wrong with you?

Ben:No man what you just did is totally not cool the poor kid might get fired

Me:Aaaargh I am just stressed I am going to have a word with her boss

John:Rather not it's going to make things worse just leave it

Me:Maybe I should give her a tip

John:Why were you acting like a crazy lover though

Me:Like I sad I am just stressed they is no need to worry

Ben:I hope you don't have your eyes on the poor kid man

Me:Aaaargh please guys I don't do kids now can we drop this

John:Heeee sure at what time are the twins arriving

Me:Millie just sent me a text that they are on their way to the airport so they will be here let's say in two hours

Ben:Are you going to fetch me at the airport and have you made some arrangements for her room

Me:Yes everything is sorted

John:I need to go and lie down tell me when the twins have arrived

Me:When is Shanell arriving?

John:Later on this evening,she has some few errands that she needs to do after wards she is flying down with Stacy and Que

Me:You must be so happy having your family around

John:(smiling)You have no idea look I'll see you guys

Ben:Wait are sure you hours are not pregnant?

John:You always talk off sides Benjy and no we are not expecting

He than left me with crazy Benjy



Ben:I bet R25 000 that Shanell has the bun in the oven

Me:Deal let me take a walk outside want to join me

Ben:Nha next time I also want to go and a take nap

Me:(laughing)Are you sure that Mpho is not pregnant

Ben:I would have known

.

.

I took a walk around the BnB I was fantasied by where the building was situated it was close to the sea giving the most beautiful view ever.My thoughts were disturbed by sweet angelic laugh which was coming from the garden

I made my way towards where the laugh was coming from and I couldn't believe it belonged to the same girl whom I was rude to earlier on.

.

.

She looks young more like sixteen where as I on the hand am thirty.

Why am I thinking about age difference it's not like I am going to ask her out she looks way to young for me

.

.

She stop laughing when she saw me standing far of from where she was sitting

Me:I am sorry to disturb I didn't mean to intrude my name is Tyrese my friends call me Ty

Man:Nice to meet you sir my name is Peter and this young lady is Kourtney but we call her Ndoni for she prefers using her African name instead of her English name

Me:(smiling)Please call me Ty,nice to meet you

Ndoni

She just looked at me and rolled her eyes without replying to my greeting

Peter:Ndoni you were taught better than that

Ndoni:Uncle Peter there are some people who actually don't have manners and you do know that I really hate it when someone is disrespectful and as for him (pointing at me)he needs to learn some manners,he can't go around shouting people and expect us to smile when he is in the mood.

Just because you live in the other side of the track does not make you any better than us,you breath the same air we do,you also have the same blood colour as mine which is Red so don't come here with your rich cheese what ever tendency sis

With that said she walked out

Peter:Forgive me sir for her sudden out

burst,she really hates it when people look down on other people

Me:No I totally understand

.

.

Who is Ndoni I feel like I need to know more about her

[07/04, 11:19] W: CHAPTER FIVE

.

.

KOURTNEY

Who ever this guy name is he better stay out of my way,many of you are probably wondering why do I let Gladys walk all over me and react when Tyrese who ever his name is will thing as much as Gladys can be a pain at times she can be very nice.I walking away when I heard him calling out my name

Me:WHAT?

Tyrese:CAN YOU PLEASE HOLD ON A SEC  
JUST HEAR ME OUT

Me:SOMEONE OF US HAVE WORK TO DO

Tyrese:Look Ndoni I am sorry about earlier..my attitude towards you and your colleague was plain rude and unnecessary please take this as my token of saying sorry

I looked at what he was offering me and it was a stack of money is these guy being serious right now

Me:You shall call me by my first name Kourtney secondly do you think that money can solve everything no it does not and it's surely not going to change your attitude do yourself a favour and look at the mirror you seriously need some self exception and no I don't need your money

Tyrese:Okay I am sorry please

Me:Mamela skeem saam(listen here friend)to do me a FAVOUR stay away from me

With that said I left him hanging there like a love stick puppy waiting for a bone

.

.

TYRESE

Clearly Ndoni does not know who I am firstly she is being disrespectful who the hell does she thinks she is,she is not my mother I can talk anyway I want if people get offended than that's their own baby to feed.

I slowly made my way to my room just than I got a text from Millie notify me that they have just arrived

Me:Should I come and pick you guys up?

Millie:No baby daddy we have called a cab it will be there in 15 mins

Me:I will wait for you guys in the entrance.

At least I have my kids coming speaking of which I need a nanny to watch over the kids and I have the perfect person in mind

.

.

Ben:When you have that smile usually means that you are up to no good so out with it

Me:So I was thinking that we should get a nanny for the kids not one but two nannies

Ben:What do you have in mind,you do know that we don't know anyone here it's going to be tricky finding the right candidate...you also do know that I don't like having strangers around my kids

Me:(smiling)I have the perfect candidates in mind and to be honest they can't say no to what I am going to offer

Ben:Okay I see you have everything under

control who is it?

Me:It's for you to find out listen I need to see the manager of this place I heard that they have cottages so instead of staying here we might as well move to the cottages it's more child friendly don't worry the cottages are in the same premises so we won't be driving

Ben:Work that charm man hey so that you know Mpho and I broke up

Me:You lying since when?

Ben:Promise you won't laugh?

Me:I promise

Ben:It's been 3 months now she said that it no longer works for her as if pssssssh

Me:(laughing)You are a free agent,welcome to the club

Ben:(laughing)You do know that Millie is coming with drama and you also know that in that crazy mind of yours she thinks you guys



are still dating

Me:Tell me about when she gets here she will start acting like my wife

Ben:What were you thinking though Millie of all the girls,you fell for Millie

Me:Esh you know what they say the heart wants what it wants

Ben:Let's go to the manager's office I have also would like to place a request

.

.

The staff members in this BnB are very nice and kind they managed to show us Ms Nceba who happens to be the owner and the manager of this place.She was resting her head on the big black oak table

Me:Excuse us hope we are not disturbing you?

Ms Nceba:(smiling)Of cause not the

receptionist told me that you guys were coming up please have a sit gentleman,can I get you anything water, juice,tea,coffee?

Ben:Juice will do

Me:Water is fine thank you

Ms Nceba:Coming right up,so are you guys enjoying your stay at Safe Zone BnB?

Me:(smiling)Yes of cause,the reason why we are here its because we would like to rent out one of your cottages if you still have one available

Ms Nceba:We don't have any cottages available at the moment but we do have a holiday house which is 15 mins away from here,it's a 16 bedroom house with 8 bathrooms,movie room,outdoor pool and so on etc

Me:We would like to rent it out as soon as possible

Ms Nceba:Are you having trouble with the staff?

Ben:No mam the staff is perfectly fine thing is our children are coming over and we want them to be in a environment which is good for them and a BnB is not a good place to have kids around

Ms Nceba:You guys can rent out the house for as long as you want,we need to do some paper work and we good to go

After signing the documents she than gave us the keys,security codes and so on

.

.

Me:We also have a small tiny bitty request and we need your help

Ms Nceba:(smiling)Yes

Me:(smiling)Since we are new in East London and we know no one we were wondering if you can offer us some nannies from your staff members,don't worry mind paying them

Ms Nceba:Mmmmmmh I don't have any one at the moment

Ben:A beautiful lady like you might have something to offer

After Ben said that she was blushing so much

Ben:So big boss what do you say,we also would like to choose the girls who are going to be taking care of our children

Me:And age restriction is between 20-25 reason being we want them active so that they will be able to play games with our children

Ms Nceba:I get your point let me send out a word to the staff,we will be having a meeting I hope you gentleman don't mind sticking around well I gather everyone around

Ben:(smiling)See why we trusted you sweet momma

Ms Nceba walked out all smiles

Me:(laughing)You should stop man

Ben:(laughing)At least my charms worked,so  
who do you have in mind I already know who I  
am going to pick as my nanny

Me:I will see once they get here

I just hope that Ndoni is among the girls who  
are working here

.

.

KOURTNEY

After my out burst with "Rich Arrogant Coconut"  
yes that's his name,I was helping the old maids  
with the heavy loads laundry.Nothing makes me  
happy than being a helping hand to those who  
need help.

A word came out that the Bosszilla what's  
everyone who is between 20-25 years in her  
office luckily I am not among them so I  
continued doing my chores.

I hope they don't get fired

.

.

TYRESE

We were having a good laugh when Ms Nceba walked in with the girls and to my surprise Ndoni was not among them,how old is Ndoni?

Ms Nceba:Gentlemen these are the ladies between the age restriction you asked for?

Me:Did you tell them why they are here?

Ms Nceba:Yes and they all agree to the terms and conditions

Ben:Let me start picking then I am not going to waste any time I pick you

He pointed at the girl who was our waiter during breakfast time

Girl:Can't this day get any worse(rolling eyes)

Ms Nceba:Haibo Samthandi do you want the job

Sam:Of cause I do

Ben:(smiling)You are going to work for me,don't worry my kids are not snobs let me brief you in

Sam:Maybe after lunch sir

Ben:Please call me Ben

Sam:Roger

that Ben

Ms Nceba:And what about you Mr Gibson

Me:Where is Ndoni,I see she is not among the girls

Ms Nceba:Oh Ndoni is 18 years old she only comes here to help her grandmother

Me:I would like to have Ndoni as my maid

Ms Nceba:Yes sir,ladies get back to work call Ndoni up here

.

.

The ladies went out I could see that Sam was excited when she heard that Ndoni will be joining her

.

.

KOURTNEY

I was hanging the laundry when Nancy came out shouting my name

Nancy:Ndoni Ndoni

Me:Yes

Nancy:Bosszilla wants to see you

Me:What have I done now

Nancy:(laughing)Relax she is in a good mood now go up you don't want to keep her waiting

Me:What about the clothes?

Nancy:(smiling)I will finish now go

Me:You the best Nancy



I quickly ran to Bosszilla office

Me:Bosszilla yhoouo I mean Ms Nceba you asked for me

Ms Nceba:I am going to pretend I didn't hear that since I am in a good mood please come in Ndoni

My heart was pumping so fast I didn't even bother to look at the people who were occupying the chairs

Ms Nceba:Relax Ndoni your grandmother is fine

Me:Pheweeeu thank goodness so why am I here

Ms Nceba started to tell me everything I was glad that I was going to work side by side with Sam

Me:Where are these bosses?

Ms Nceba:Are you blind Ndoni please meet Tyrese Gibson your boss

Me:NO

Tyrese:YES(smiling)

[07/04, 11:19] W: CHAPTER SIX

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Me:There is no way that I will be working for him,in fact he is the reason why I got my salary deducted

After saying that Bosszilla was embrassed

I hate being out spoken at times

Ms Nceba:I think it's a good idea Ndoni think about it

Me:My answer is still a big fat NO

Ms Nceba:Can you guys please kindly excuse us for a moment I would like to have a chat with Ndoni,ummmh Sam please tell Anchie to start sending the cleaning team at the holiday house for it will be occupied as in today

Sam:Yes mam

Turning to Ty and Ben

Sam:Gentlemen please follow me

Ms Nceba:Sam close the door on your way out

Sam slowly nodded

They all left the room leaving me behind with Bosszilla,not so long ago she was breathing fire why all of a sudden has she changed her mind?

What if she is a human trafficker or a pimp and she is trying to sell me...Oh Lord have mercy...you know what the devil is a liar not today sathana

.

.

Ms Nceba:I am not a pimp or a human trafficker

Oh gosh she can read minds too now

what

Ms Nceba:Relax Ndoni you were just saying everything out loud

.

.

See me whenever I get nervous I have this bad habit of saying things out loud most of the time I think I am saying it inside where as my mouth is busy saying it out for all to hear,which is why I don't have friends cause I am the type of person who sees no point in talking behind someone back like seriously guys if you have a problem with someone talk it out there is no need for you to go around and speaking bad about someone,tell me what gain are you going to get

when trashing someone's name?

The sad reality is this you gain absolutely Nothing instead you are busy making them famous.

Gogo has always thought me this bible verse which happens to be favourite

Psalm 1:1

"Blessed is a man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked,or stands in the way of sinners or sits in the seat of mockers"

Sometimes life is so good when we mind our own business,if you are in a place where it brings out the worst in you it's better to move yourself from such places even so there are people who are not good for you,instead of being around and tolerating such people and places move yourself because your life is worth more than being around people who gossip,who always complain get up and walk.Even if it means you are going to walk alone know that

God is with you remember change is not in the world but rather it's in you, it starts with you..you are change.

.

.

Ms Nceba: You really have a wild imagination  
Ndoni (laughing) please have a sit, first you called me "bosszilla" now you are thinking I am a pimp to top that up you think I am a human trafficker girl your brain is working over time you need to relax

Me: (embarrassed) I didn't mean it like that ma and I would like to apologise if somehow I have hurted your feelings

Ms Nceba: (smiling) Apology accepted, now tell me why don't you want to work for Mr Gibson?

Me: He is very rude, he thinks the world revolves around him, he doesn't have respect oh the list goes on... I can't work for someone like that

Ms Nceba:Of course you can look I think you should take the offer I know you are very good with kids,Khanya can't stop talking about you ever since you were her baby sitter when she was here,she would be like

"Mommy where is sisi Ndoni she is the best,Sisi Ndoni is my best friend but after you mommy"

If you are able to work for me than I am sure you can handle Mr Gibson

Me:(smiling)I thought she has forgotten about me you should bring her over ma,I really had a good time baby sitting Khanya for you

Ms Nceba:Which is why you should take the offer

Me:Can I think about it,I want to ask Gogo about this

Ms Nceba:Take all the time you need remember you have till late this afternoon to give me your answer

Me:Yes mam let me get back to work than

Ms Nceba:And Ndoni I was only pulling your leg when I said I am going to deduct money from your salary,it would be cruel of me to do such cause at the end of the day you earned it and you worked hard for it but the fact still remains the

Me:Customer is always right

Ms Nceba:And the reason why I act like a "Bosszilla" it's because I want each and every one of you guys to perform best in their capabilities,regardless of what job description they are working in I totally respect each and every staff member working in this BnB because if it was not for them than they wouldn't be Safe Zone.

Safe Zone BnB is here today all because of you guys I had the dream and you guys are helping me fulfil it

Me:Wow mam,you should try smiling you really



looks good on you boo flip I mean Ma

Ms Nceba:(laughing)you and these pet names of yours will get you in trouble one day,now get back to work and Ndoni remember you have 8 hours to come with your decision

Me:Yes mam

Ms Nceba:On your way out call Rachel

Me:Yes mam

Ms Nceba:You are dismissed

You know Ms Nceba is not bad as I thought,under that Bosszilla attitude lies a very kind and warm women I am glad to be working for her not many bosses are like her.

.

.

TYRESE

We have been sitting at the terrace waiting for Millie and the twins to arrive any moment from

now

Ben:What agenda do you have with that kid?

Me:What are you talking about?

Ben:You can fool the rest but not me so out with it

Me:There is no hidden agenda,she just seems like a suitable nanny for the twins

Ben:(smiling)A beautiful nanny too,keep fooling yourself anybody can see you are whipped

Me:Aaaaaaargg Ben I only met her today there is no way I can be whipped....it's to soon and she is a kid

Ben:Love has no age...you still in denial you don't know it yet but very soon you will.

There is no way the Tyrese I know will run after a girl without having an agenda let's just hope everything will work out fine since we have Millie your crazy baby mama on board.

You know I hope that Ndoni will be the one who will be able to tame you down, honestly speaking maybe what John said earlier on is right we are not getting any younger and it's time for us to settle down. There are times when I look how beautiful John and Shanell love is, they are both not perfect yet at the same time make their love same seem perfect

I want to build a solid and stable home for the boys as much as it sucks I am glad that things didn't work out between me and Mpho

Me: Where is the Benjamin I know dude are you sure you not coming down with a flu

Ben: (laughing) Of course not I am perfectly fine just think about what I said... We can't be gangsters for Life Tyrese

.

.

KOURTNEY

I went out to look for Gogo I needed her input in this,so I found her in the laundry room ironing some sheets

Me:The Queen of my heart,my Kentucky bone..The one who holds the keys of my heart

Gogo:(smiling)You really need to go for a check up

Ndoni yam

Me:(laughing)So you are trying to say I am crazy

Gogo:(smiling)Your words not mine,you are just unique you are my Ndoni my sweet beautiful Ndoni

Me:You are going to make me cry mama

Gogo:It's the truth nana,so tell me why are you here I hope you finished with your chores we don't want Bosszilla breathing down our necks

Me:(laughing)Hawu mama Bosszilla is sweet,we should start calling her Boo even she continues being a Zilla than we will call her Boo

Bosszilla

I started telling Gogo about the offer

Gogo:I think you should go for it,I know that you like taking care of kids

Me:Nyani Nyani mama(Really really mama)

Gogo:Yes baby don't let this pass you by maybe you are going to get paid more than what you are getting here

Me:It's not about the money mama,you have always said that money doesn't bring joy...The only reason I shall take the offer it's because I love children

Gogo:Go for it baby I am behind you 10000%

Me:You my biggest supporter I love you mama

Gogo:Ncooooh I love you too baby,now go and tell Boo Bosszilla the good news

Me: okay okay

.

.

I hope I made the right choice if Mr Arrogant gives me problems he has another thing coming

[07/04, 11:19] W: SOME SNACK BEFORE DINNER ♥

.

.

CHAPTER SEVEN

.

TYRESE

What Ben said earlier made me realise something indeed we are not getting any younger and the clock is ticking,I disagree on the part where he said I am falling for Ndoni even though I do not realise it.

It is very impossible for someone to fall in love

without them knowing they are in love am I making any sense?

Ben:Stop over thinking just allow everything to take place on it's own time okay

Me:Yeah sure

.

.

Millie arrived 10 mins later we even came back from checking out the holiday house

Millie:We got struck in traffic

Tyrella:Mommy is lying daddy her and Auntie Angie were kissing some guys at the...

Millie:Keep quiet you little b....

Me:I dare you to call my child a brat

Millie:I was going to say baby...you need to chill

Me:Where is Travis?

Millie:He is sleeping,aren't you going to give me

some loving Ty

Me:You need to understand that we are only in this because of them

Ben:Still don't understand why you got her pregnant she is crazy,Ella do you want some ice cream baby

Tyrella:Yes uncle but first let's wake up Boo boo(Travis) we can't go without him

Millie:I heard that Benjamin

Ben:Duh that's the whole point I wanted you to hear it

Tyrella:Why are you shouting at mommy?

Me:No one is shouting at mommy baby we just having an grown up conversation

Tyrella:What's a conversation?

Me:It's a dialogue between to people

Tyrella:What's a dialogue?

Me:Uuuuh baby just go and wake up your



brother

Tyrella:But you haven't answered me,daddy my teacher says it's rude not to answer back when a person is asking you a question

Me:Your teacher is right,now go and wake your brother up

Tyrella:Okay daddy

Me:You guys need to watch how you speak to each other I don't want my kids to get your bad habits

Ben:Just tell her to stay out of my way

With that said he went to the car leaving me with Millie and her friend Angel,Agnes what ever name is

Millie:Tyrese I would like you to meet my friend Angie short for Agnes,Angie this is

Angie:Oh my gosh Tyrese Gibson...I thought she was joking when she said you are the baby daddy nice to me you

Without waiting for my response she just hugged me

Me:Ooooookay like wise Angie

Millie:So are you going to show us our room,we need to freshen up

Me:Listen before you guys get head over heels I need to know when you leaving

Millie:Hawu Ty we just got here and already you want to know when we are leaving,the kids need me so I just can't leave them,they need to settle in you know they have a routine

Me:I need an answer Millicent and you do know the twins are perfectly fine in my care it's not like you are leaving them with a stranger and also Ben kids together with Shanell and the kids are coming down here so I don't think you are needed and also there have a nanny already

Millie:I need to interview the nanny I don't want any random person touching my babies

Me:That won't be needed cause the interview has been conducted

As I was busy talking with them Ms Nceba assistant came over to where I was sitting

Rachel:Afternoon ladies,Mr Gibson Ms Nceba would like to have a word with you

Me:What is it about,is it about Ndoni?

Millie:Who the heck is Ndoni?

Me:And why are you listening to my conversation

Millie:I...I...Angie let's go to the bar

Rachel:(smiling)She did not say sir

Me:Okay let's go

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

After talking with Gogo I went to Ms Nceba office to tell her that I will be taking the job

We were both talking until the so called Mr Gibson walked in

Me:What is he doing here?(whispering)

Ms Nceba:Ndoni not now please

Me:Okay okay okay sorry ma

Tyrese:Hope I didn't keep you ladies waiting

Ms Nceba:Please take a sit

Tyrese:Thank you

Ms Nceba:How do you find the house,is they anything you would like to change?

Tyrese:Everything is fine Ms Nceba and I am sure the kids are going to love it

Ms Nceba:That's good to hear,you probably wondering why you are here

He just nodded

Ms Nceba:Well Ndoni has accepted your offer even though she has some questions which she would like to ask you

Me:When will I start working?

Tyrese:Will it be out of your way if I asked you to start today cause the twins have arrived

Me:No it's fine,how much are you going to pay me?

Tyrese:R10 000

Both Ms Nceba and I grasped

Me:Ummmmmmh that is way to expensive

Tyrese:The reason why it is it's because I want you to be around them 24 hours which means you will be moving in as in today

Me:Are you being serious right now?

Tyrese:Dead serious...so what is it going to be are you in or should I start looking for someone

else

Me:It's a deal

Tyrese:Write down your bank details and I will make the payment via phone,which bank are you using?

Me:FNB

Tyrese:Good than,Ms Nceba thank you for your help

Ms Nceba:Oooh it's nothing Mr Gibson

Tyrese:Excuse ne ladies I need to make the kids settle in,Ndoni I guess I will see you later

Me:Yeeeeeeees

.

.

With that said he walked out Ms Nceba:Tell me I am dreaming,did he just day R10 000

Me:Just pinch me Ma

Ms Nceba:Yoooooooooh I need to lay down

[07/04, 11:19] W: CHAPTER EIGHT

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ms Nceba:No man Ndoni did this really happen,is it one of your wild crazy imaginations?

Me:No man ma he really did offer me R10 000

Just than a bank notification came through

Me:(screaming)Ma ma ma ma look

I was showing her the bank notification

Ms Nceba:Tell Rachel to cancel all my meetings

I need to lie down,I thought I was loaded but

this guy is in another level,you are getting a half day Ndoni I want you to go home and start

packing I don't want this opportunity to pass you by in fact I am offering myself

Me:I hope you don't want a share

Ms Nceba:(laughing)Oh please I make something close to 100K per day

Me:(laughing)If you are making such money why are you sweating

Ms Nceba:Ndoni stop asking questions you need to be there by five pm

Me:Okay we need to show Gogo

Ms Nceba:Come she will have a half day too

Me:Why are you doing this ma?

Ms Ndoni:Because you and Sam deserve it Ndoni like I want you guys to succeed,now come let's go

Heeeehh Boo Bosszilla is really confusing me but I know she means well

.



.

TYRESE

We were now at the guest house, Ben kids have also arrived they were busy running around the house

Me: Guys stop running you going to fall  
Travis, Ella and Thando do you want to be in the naughty corner?

Travis: Sorry daddy

Thando: Sorry Uncle

Ella: If we are not running than what are we going to do cause we want to play

Travis: I have a plan but we need to an elder to help us

Ella: What does elder mean daddy?

Me: Ask Travis he is the one who came up with the name

Ella: Boo boo what does elder mean?

Travis:Daddy help Boo boo out

Thando:The meaning of elder means an older person is that right uncle Tee

Me:Correct baby you deserve a glass of milk...who wants a glass of milk?

Ella:Me

Travis:Me

Thando:Me three uncle

Me:Let's go to the kitchen than

Ella:Daddy where is mommy

Me:She is out with Auntie Angie,why do you want her sweetie?

Ella:No I want you daddy,daddy Aunt Angie is a bad friend to mommy

Me:Why do you say that pumpkin

Ella:Promise you won't tell on me

Travis:Berry berry you pinky swore that you

wouldn't tell anyone,you made a promise with mom

Ella:Sorry daddy can't break a promise..We pinky swore

Me:Okay nana,Travis and Thando go and call uncle Ben tell him that he needs to come down here

Travis:Okay daddy

.

.

They ran upstairs leaving me and my princess I needed to get to the bottom of this,if Millie is abusing my kids she will pay and not only that I will have sole custody over them

.

.

Me:So pumpkin tell daddy the secret

Ella:Promise you won't tell anyone

Me:I promise

Ella:Come let's hide somewhere I don't want boo boo to found out

We then went to the celler where she kept on checking on her brother,for crying out they are six years old what do they know about keeping secrets

Ella:Daddy come and let me whisper in your ear

Me:There is no need for that honey we are alone so no one is going to find out

Ella:Well when my friends tell me a secret at school we lock ourselves in the bathroom they always whisper in my ear,if I say it out loud it's no longer a secret

Me:Young lady you getting to big for your shoes

Ella:My shoes fit me just fine daddy

Me:I know baby

I bent down to her level,she then came to my

ear will giggling

Ella:(whispering)Well they was this other time when mommy was drinking this red drink,daddy I don't like it when mommy drinks the red cool drink because she becomes mean to me and boo boo...daddy please make mommy stop

Me:I will talk with mommy okay,daddy loves you and boo boo so much okay

Ella:I love you too daddy

Me:Do you want to live with daddy?

Ella:Yes

Just than Travis and Thando walked in on us

Travis:You guys are playing hide and seek without us

Me:It was berries idea,where is Papa Ben

Thando:He is in the kitchen

Me:Let's go to the kitchen than

Travis:You owe us some milk

Me:Milk coming right up why don't you guys go and watch some TV so long I want to talk to Papa Ben

.

.

Ben:Yoooooh what's up you seem mad

Me:MILLICENT IS REALLY TESTING ME RIGHT NOW,SHE PROMISED SHE WOULDN'T DRINK IN FRONT OF THE KIDS

I SWEAR I AM GOING TO KILL HER

Ben:Ty just calm down please the kids can't see you like this

Me:I need to blow off some steam,can you watch them Ndoni will arrive later on today, when is Sam arriving

Ben:Where are you going,she is coming with Ndoni

Me:The beach,I need to be alone Ben

Ben:Take all the time you need just come back normal

Me:I SWEAR I AM GOING TO STRANGLE

Ben:I will start looking for a rope and a plastic bag...We will burn her body

Me:(laughing)No man you can't be serious if you help me we both are going down at least one of us needs to be around to take care of the kids

Ben:(laughing)If you go down I will go down with you...John and Shanell will take the kids

Me:Let me go before your crazy ideas become a reality,send me a text when Ndoni and Sam have arrived

Ben:Mmmmm I will see about that

Me:You better not make a move on her

Ben:Wooooooh Dragon slayer hold your horses why are you so possessive when it comes to Ndoni heeeeh my man is in love I need to tell

John about this

Me:Aaaaah let me go,see you guys later call me if the twins start acting up

Ben:Chill lex bro I got this now go

.

.

KOURTNEY

Nothing much happened other than my grandmother being happy about the whole thing,we were back at the BnB and I was waiting for Anchie to take me to the holiday house even though it's a 15 mins walk I don't see what the fuss is all about but Boo Bosszilla insisted

on me being transported we were also waiting for Sam

Me:Can I take a walk

Gogo:Where to Ndoni?

Me:The beach I just need some fresh air



Gogo:You can go but I want to see you before you go okay and stop feeling bad you are not leaving me soon you are going to go to varsity and I will be left alone

Me:Why do I feel like I am living you

Gogo:You feeling like this because you have always been by my side but now is your time to spread your wings nana okay,go ahead and take that walk you need it

Me:Thanks mama

.

.

I took my grandmothers advice and I took a walk I don't know why but something in me lead me to the other side of the beach,where there was a huge rock

As I was busy watching the waves a bold deep and yet husky voice disturbed me from my thoughts and you won't believe who it is

Me:Your face is starting to annoy me(bored expression)

Tyrese:Mind if I join you?

Me:Yes I do mind,like dude look around you there is plenty of space you can occupy just leave me alone(annoyed)

Tyrese:I saw a beautiful angel sitting alone all by itself and I

Me:Heeeeeee heeeeeee heeeeeee your sweet talk words,poetry what what is not going to move me keep on moving man

Tyrese:You something else

Me:You not the first to say that now go

[07/04, 11:20] W: CHAPTER NINE

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Me:Look Mr Gibson

Tyrese:Please call me Ty or Tyrese

Me:Okay Ty look we can't do this you are my boss and I would like you to respect whatever working relationship we going to have

Ty:And I get that okay but Ndoni look...

Raising my hand stopping him from finishing his sentence...you know when you spend most of your time with guys you already know the next "lame" line and guys are dumb after so many years they still use the same pick up line

Me:Aaa.aaaa don't want to hear it

Ty:You don't even know what I was going to say,see you keep on cutting me short without listening to me

Me:I know what you were going to say "look Ndoni I would like us to start a fresh"...not happening Ty

Ty:(laughing)How did you know I was going to use that line?

Me:(smiling)I know most of the tricks most guys use,you guys are so predictable you should change the lines ngeke we tired of hearing the same record over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over again

Ty:Yes she smiled finally we getting somewhere,you should loosen up Ndoni

Me:Loosen up for who and for the why?

Ty:What was that?

Me:And that is my quene to leave see you later  
BOSS BEAR

Ty:(laughing)Do I look like a bear?

Me:(laughing)You don't get it....let me leave you see you later Ty

Ty:Bye Ndoni and thank you for revealing that cute smile of yours really needed it, even though you are mean

Me:I give you what you give me Ty,next time watch how you speak with people

Ty:Thank you Ndoni and I will watch how I speak hope you are happy.

Me:You are not doing it for me but yourself,you also doing it for your kids...They need a good role model whom they will look up to it and it all starts with you.

I have to go now Ty

With that said I walked away leaving him standing,still looking at my direction..I can feel his eyes on me and I am not going to turn back

.

.

TYRESE

There is something about Ndoni that keeps on drawing me closer to her,there is just something about her that I can't seem to figure out.

She is like a book which in order for you to know about the next chapter you need to read the previous chapter in order to understand the next chapter. Ndoni is like that she is just a book which you can't get enough of.

As she was walking away it dawned to me that she had a beautiful body she was wearing a summer dress which fitted her perfectly together with some sandals which revealed her chubby yet cute feet. The dress was hugging her body in the right place, how is it possible for a person to be gifted in physique and at the same time she is more beautiful than any other women I have before. Yes Ndoni is beautiful even Millie has nothing on her

She even has blue eyes one would mistake her for a white person, and not forgetting her eyes they are so blue like the ocean I kinda got lost in them, what I noticed about her is the fact that her mouth says the opposite of what her eyes are saying, with her words she seems mean

where as her eyes show warmth,love and kindness maybe the reason why she is like that is because she doesn't want people to take advantage of her which is fine but why does she not let her guide down,I mean there are alot of women who would like to have just a simple conversation with me just because they lust over my looks yes people I look good to a point where women throw themselves at me,now with Ndoni she doesn't seem fazed by my looks.

What is it about her God that keeps me wanting to know her more,she is young but they say age is just number I don't want her as a booty call I have plenty of them but.....aaaaaaargh let me drop this my emotions are over the place

Am I falling for Ndoni cause every time I see her my heart skips a beat not only that my stomach experiences wired sensations which feel like something is flying within me.

Me:Come on Ty you not fall for the girl first you

need to sort out yourself before you take someone.....but why does it feel so right with her

.

.

KOURTNEY

Gogo:We have been waiting for you,you surely know how to take your sweet time love

Me:Sorry mama has Sam arrived yet

Gogo:Yes baby but before you go I would like to have a word with you

Me:Okay let's go somewhere it's more private

.

.

We went out to the back garden it was more private and my gogo is a huge fan of nature together with me though I think got my love for nature from her



Gogo:Baby you know that I love you right

Me:And I love you too mama

Gogo:Never forget that,now if things do not work out at Mr Gibson I want you to come back home don't tolerate any behavior Ndoni I want you to come back home,remember to spend more time with God I don't want you to relay on prayer only but I also want you to deepen your relationship with God because baby out of all the people in this BnB he picked you and we do know it is by God's grace now don't forget Him when you get there.

In each and everything you do ask God for guidance and He will show you.There is a reason why you are going there Ndoni and I want you to focus baby when the going gets tough pray my love and remember I am only 15 mins away so come to me okay

Me:(crying)Thanks Gogo I was starting to think that I can't do this

Gogo:Phillippians 4:13

"I can do all things through Him who strengthens me"

Don't be afraid baby you can do this

Me:(smiling)Thank you mama see why you are the Queen of my heart,you encourage me through the word of God..you are my angel ma

Gogo:Oooooooh baby now before you leave there is something I would like us talk about

Me:Sounds serious

Gogo:I don't know how to say this but....umh never mind

Me:You can't tell me that out with Mama

Gogo:How would you feel if I said I am currently seeing someone

Me:You dizzy frizzzy fox,you are seeing Bab'Dlamini

My gogo just blushed her cheeks even turned

pink

Me:You sly fox when did it all happen I want the details

Gogo:(laughing)I will tell you everything tomorrow and by the way you need to come by he wants to see you

Me:Mara why he knows me mos

Gogo:Yes but he wants to hear how you feel about us seeing each other

Me:Cool then you will tell me when to come over ne

Gogo:Yes baby now come you need to get going

Me:No wonder you not even bother with me going you are going to have some sleep overs no Bab'Dlamini(laughing)who would have thought that wena Gogo

Gogo:I am not that old khandiyeke nditye ubutsha bam(let me be I want to embrace my

youth)

Me:(laughing)You should say old age cause you certainly not getting any younger,uligriza alk(you are a granny)

Gogo:Point of correction I am one smoking hot Griza tshni

Me:(laughing)Who has been teaching you such terms

Gogo:(laughing)Gladys

Me:Amen let me get going ke

[07/04, 11:20] W: CHAPTER TEN

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Sam:Oh my word I am happy you have agreed

She was jumping up and down

Gogo:Sam remember the talk we had earlier on

Sam:Yes ma that prayer is everything and that I should maximum this opportunity for it comes once in a life time

Me:She also gave you a pep talk

Gogo:Heeeeh wena it wasn't a pep talk,I love you guys and I want what's best for you both

Sam:And we know that you mean well and I promise we will do as you said ma

Gogo:And remember have each others back there

Sam:We will ma I promise I will take care of her

Me:You guys are making it sound as if we are going to another country like hello people we are in the same plot only 15 mins away

Gogo:Oh you such a party popper Ndoni,come let's do a group hug before you ladies leave

We all gather in a group hug, Gogo giving us kisses on the forehead just than Anchie came by

Anchie:Time to go ladies,the boss lady won't be able to bid farewell all she says is represent the BnB well

Just than Gladys walked in she was carrying her bags too

Me:Haibo and then?

Gladys:Oh you didn't get the memo

Me:Duh we wouldn't be asking you if we knew

Sam:Just say it Gladie

Gladys:You know I hate that name

Me:You should be Ma Gladie

Sam:(laughing)Yoooooh Ndoni no man

Gladys:Ma

Gogo:Ndoni,Sam apologise to Gladys

now

Me:(laughing)But Gogo we just...

Gogo:I will use both of your faces to wipe this floor,now apologise

Sam:(laughing)Ma Gladie....yhooooooo I mean Gladys

Me:(laughing)Look Gladys we are sorry,we just kidding man so tell us what's with the bags

Gladys:Before you disturbed me I was still saying that I am going to be a maid together with Sandy and Tam at the guest house

Sam:At least I am going to be a nanny

Me:Let us not look down on each others jobs Sam,we are all in this together remember Boozilla wants us to represent her and we are going to have arguments but what matters is this we remain together no matter what right Gee,Sam?

Sam:Aaaaaaaarh I hate it when you are right

Gladys:Even though there are times when I become rude with you guys it does not mean I hate or dislike you both....it's just I take you guys as my younger sisters and you do know that siblings fight but mostly they stick together no matter.

I love the way our relationship is cause we fight than we love and fight and love again but I wouldn't change you guys,and Gogo you are the mother I never had and thank you for always pushing me into being the best person I can be regardless of where I am come from and for the that you will be my first lady

Gogo:Ooooooh baby come and get some sugar

Me:You need to tone it down Ma

Anchie:Sorry to break the bonding but ladies you need to leave

Me:Okay okay

Gogo:Babies take care of yourselves and..



Us:Remember what I taught you

We all ended up laughing

Anchie:Guys it's time to go

Gogo:Take care of each other and I will keep you in my prayers

Us:We love you too

I still don't understand why they are making a big deal out of this we only 15 mins away oh weeeeeh black like to exaggerate kanene

Sam:Let's do this

Me:Yeeeeeeey I wonder what's a waits for me,are the kids snobs are they disrespectful just like their father will guess I have to wait and see

.

.

After 15 mins we pulled out off the car we were parking outside this huge massive house,why didn't I know anything about this

Heeeeh Ms Boozilla is loaded

kana she as such a beautiful house hidden in  
this plot

Anchie:Ladies welcome to your destination

Sam:Wow

Anchie:Let me show you your head quaters

Me:Oh thank goodness we won't be sharing the  
house with the bosses

He lead us into this beautiful cosy yet  
sophisticated cottage

Anchie:This is where you will be living

Gladys:And the other maids and chef where are  
the staying?

Anchie:Remember the first cottage we passed  
will coming here

Us:Yes

Anchie:They live there

Sam:So you are telling us this belongs to us

Anchie:Yes

We started screaming

Sam:This has to be the best summer holiday ever

Gladys:This calls for a toast

Me:Maybe later remember we will celebrate later on

Anchie:Have to go now guys enjoy

Us:Thank you Anchie

Anchie left after showing us around

.

.

As we were preparing to go the main house there was a knock

Me:Wow we already have visitors

Me:Okay coming

I opened and there stood two beautiful ladies

Me:Ummmmmh hello

Girl 1:Hey this is Sandy and I am Tam you must be Ndoni

Me:Okay please come in

Sandy:Well Gladys talks about you and Sam a lot

Me:Ooooooh okaaaay hope good things

Tam:No need to worry sweetie we are all friends

Me:Ummmmmh let me go and call Gladys please make yourselves comfortable

.

.

I ran to our bedroom luckily both Sam and Gee were both there

Me:Guys there are two psychos downstairs who know our names

Gladys:(laughing)Hawu Ndoni that must be Sandy and Tam

Me:They sound creepy for my liking and they are to loud

Sam:Oh Ndoni you need to relax

Me:Wait till you see them, Gladys talk to your friends call me when they gone

Gladys:Sam can you come with me I don't want to be rude to our guests

Me:You mean your "creepy" friends

Sam:(laughing)Ndoni stop it man,Gee come let's go and meet our neighbours and leave Ms ain't social alone

Me:Don't come running to me when they start stealing your under garments

Gladys:Heeeeeeeeeeeeh(claps once)amen

Sam:You so wired

Gladys:Let's go before we get infected by this

bug

Sam:We will come and call you when it's time to go and let your hair down for once

[07/04, 11:20] W: CHAPTER ELEVEN

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

3 HOURS LATER

Sam:Ndoni it's time to wake up we need to leave as in now

Me:Why didn't you wake me up earlier on

Sam:We have been calling you for the past 10 mins now get up we need to go

Me:Just five more mins please

Sam:Do you want me to call the  
"weirdos"(laughing)

Me:(waking up)You wouldn't dare

Sam:Try me in fact they have been asking about  
you

Me:What were they asking?

Sam:(laughing)I will tell you later now come we  
need to help them out

Me:Why?

Sam:They are running short of staff today,well  
the chef couldn't come through today he says  
that there is an family emergency

which needs his attention

Me:Let me tie my hair and we good to go

Sam:Try to loosen up they not creepy  
Ndoni(laughing)

Me:We will have to wait and see about that so

how should I tie my hair today

Sam:Since we will be in the kitchen and serving the "bosses" tie it into a neat bun and don't wear your eye contents

Gladys:(shouting) Guys come down we are running late

Us:Coming

Sam:No matter what we can do this

Me:Even if they are rude I am not going to talk back

Sam:Wooooooh shame this I got to see(laughing)come let's go before Ma Gladie acts up

Gladys:I heard that

.

.

TYRESE

.



.

After Ndoni left I decided to leave to,we were now waiting for John and Shanell to arrive

Me:Have the nannies arrived

Ben:Yes Anchie dropped them off 3 hours ago

Me:What why didn't you tell me,hang on a sec where are they aren't they suppose to check in

Ben:They are leaving off premises,I asked Anchie to let them settle in first before coming here

Me:When are they going to arrive

Ben:Dinner time look we will discuss this when the others have arrived,so have you calmed down

Me:Yes still can't believe that she went back into drinking

Ben:Why don't you just kill her Ty

Me:I can't do that she is the mother of my kids,I

can't rob them off a mothers love..I know how it feels to grow up with no parents I don't want that for the twins

Ben:You are becoming a softy it's true when they say that being a parent changes one perceptively,six years ago it was all about you you you but now you are thinking about the twins big up to that man.I never thought that you would change

Me:Same with you Ben we have come a long way guys remember we used to be party boys remember how John was back then

Ben:He was the worst out of all us if only Toby was still here with us,Aaaaargh I am sorry man just that I think about him every day, I still ask myself what made him do it

Me:No it's fine look I need to check on my emails call me when Shanell and John have arrived

I walked away but Ben called out to me

Ben:Ty?

Me:Yeah

Ben:It will get better with time

Me:That's what you guys have been saying for the past three years,will time bring back Tasha?

.

.

You guys are probably wondering who Toby and Tasha are,well he is my twin brother and Tasha is our one and only sister who was sold by her own brother just for entering a well known gang called the BK,he decided to go against me and the crew,he sold us out which lead to our sister being killed in the process

Me:My sister would still be alive but no Toby wanted more he was so greedy that he even used his one and only sister to be a ticket to his rich life style...I swear Ben I won't stop until I find Toby even the BK can't hide him forever

Ben:Revenge is not always the right route to take...just let it go Ty...Tasha is gone

Me:No no no just leave it...I promised mom and dad that I would protect her even though she was my older sister but still she was their princess....how could I have not known what my brother was planning he is my twin for crying out loud

.

.

.

BATTERY LOW THERE IS NO ELECTRICITY I WILL CONTINUE ÖNCE IT COMES BACK....I KNOW IT'S SHORT I WILL MAKE IT UP TO YOU GUYS

.

.

SORRYRINI

[07/04, 11:20] W: CHAPTER ELEVEN

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

TYRESE

Me:I still want to know why he did it,why did he walk away from me we are or should I say were brothers we shared the same womb,we share the same birthday

Ben:Let's just forget about him..

Me:You guys make it sound so easy will let me tell you Ben it's not easy to let go of the one you love...to make things worse he is my twin,I know when he is hurt physically I can feel it I don't know how to explain it but I know when he is hurting and you guys have been saying that

he might be dead well he is still alive that I know  
like you said before let's drop it

Ben:Are you still going to check your emails or  
you were just trying to walk away from this  
"Tobby talk"

Me:I will check them after dinner let me go and  
check the kids

Ben:Call Thando

Me:Alright mate

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

We were now in the kitchen and we haven't  
seen nor heard from the bosses we were  
almost done with making dinner and of cause I  
was chef for the day together with Sam

Tam:Don't know what we would have done without you guys

Sandy:You guys are heavenly sent you must be tired due to the running around

Sam:We used to this kind of work at the BnB

Gladys:We should be open a restaurant I will be the manager and of course be responsible for the finances

Me:(laughing)Keep on dreaming you can be the manager but not Ms Finance

Gladys:You have so little faith in me Ndoni anyways how long till the gravy is done

Me:Just 5 mins than we done

Sam:I need a massage after this

Tam:You guys can come over to our place

Gladys:How about you guys come over to our place we can have a sleep over that's of Ndoni and Sam do not mind

Sam:Am down to the idea Ndoni?

Me:What if I say no than I will be the bad guy right?

Them:YES

Me:Alright alright you can come over then

They all started screaming

Sandy:We can handle this why don't you guys go and set the dinner table so long

Me:How many people are having dinner

Tam:Six adults and five to six children

Sam:Why so many okay Ndoni let's go

Me:Why can't Gladys go out with you

Gladys:Because you are the youngest

Me:But I prepared supper

Tam:With our help

of cause

Me:Aaaaaaargh let's go Sam



Tam:(laughing)We love you too pumpkin

Me:This is child abuse

Tam:We will do the dishes

Me:(smiling)Why didn't you say in the first place

Sandy:(smiling)Now you know

.

.

We left the kitchen and we started preparing the dining hall when two loud women entered the room,you could tell from a mile away that they were smelling a brewery and the squeaky voices were annoying

Me:(rolling eyes)Here comes drama

Sam:Remember Ndoni you are here to work

Me:But that does not mean I have to tolerate drama but since I made a promise I am going to tone it down

Sam:(laughing)Let's make a bet,R500 you are

going to react

Me:If I win you will pay me right,will I am going to let it slide

Sam:Deal

Me:Deal

.

.

We continued dressing the table one would swear that a president or king is going to dine here,that's how good the table looked in fact Boozilla has taught us well

Ben came down looking all fresh and clean,he was smelling good,he looks good but he has nothing on Tyrese

Oh Ndoni why are you thinking about him you don't like the guy,he is not even your type guys like him don't fall for girls like you remember Ndoni you are here to work

Me:Focus Ndoni Focus

Sam:What was that?

Me:(smiling)I am just singing

Ben:(smiling)Ladies you are here finally wow  
this looks good(referring to the table)

He kept his eyes on Sam phela my sister is  
flames,she is a true differentiation of a dark  
beauty,the way her skin is flawless one would  
think she uses make up and not forgetting her  
natural afro Sam is a beauty an African beauty

Sam:(smiling)Oh it's nothing sir

Oh I forgot to mention she has dimples on both  
sides of her cheeks

Ben:(smiling)Please call me Ben

I may be dumb when it comes to the "love  
department" that's one department where I  
suck I mean Gogo is dating where as for miss  
I, Miss big mouth weeeeeeh dololo anyways my  
eyes may be deceiving me but something is

going to happen between these two

Sam:Come back to earth Ndoni

Me:Oh sorry you were saying

Sam:Ben says he is sorry about what Mr Gibson did earlier on

Me:(smiling)Oh no need I am way passed that,you can call everyone Ben

Ben:Sure thing let me get the kids to come down

Me:Have they taken a bath or they shall take it after supper

Ben:They usually have it before bedtime

Sam:We will bath after they have their dinner,excuse us

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

I was wearing my shirt when a tiny knock came through I knew it was either Ella or Travis

Me:Who is it?

Travis:It's me daddy open up

Me:Who is me?

Travis:Your Travis now open up I miss you

I went to the door and there he was standing with his teddy bear

I picked him up and started tickling him

Hearing him laugh was music to my ears...It had the effect of soothing any form of pain....man I love my kids

Travis:(laughing)Da....ddddy stop I'm going to pee on myself

Me:First say you love me than I will stop

Travis:(laughing)Okay okay...I L.....oooooooooove  
you

Me:And I love you too now give daddy a kiss

He did just that he is not a diva like his sister  
who would say

Daddy I am to old for that

Travis:Daddy

Me:Yes

Travis:Can I please spend the night with you

Me:Of cause boy but after having your bath now  
come let's go and have dinner

Travis:You going to help me right

Me:Yes

.

.

We found everyone sitted at the table even  
John and Shanell

Me:The power couple when did you guys arrive(giving Shanell a hug)

Shanell:(smiling)We just arrived wow the table looks good...whoever did this I need some tips

Ben:(smiling)Sam and Ndoni did the table

Me:They are here,where are they?

Just than Millie and Angie walked in

Me:Maybe you should call it a night Millie  
you can't even walk

Millie:Mxm just leave me alone you are not my father,waiter/chef get me a drink(shouting)

Ben:Kids why don't you go to the kitchen,we will call you just now okay ask Auntie Sam for your meal,eat all your vegetables

They all stood up and left

Shanell:Come Babe you need to lie down you had too much

Millie:Ooooooh so you are calling me a

alcoholic now wow Shanell

Shanell:Of cause not love you had to many and you are going to frighten the kids come and take a nap

Millie:Maybe after I finish having my supper

Shanell:Than behaviour yourself

Millie:I will

Just than Ndoni and Sam followed by two other girls came out with our plates...The food appeared good can't wait to have a spoon

Us:Thank you

Sam:Enjoy please shout if you need anything

Me:Aren't you guys going to join us

Sam:No Mr Gibson we will be in the kitchen if you need us

.

.



Only our cutlery were making the sounds in the dinner table

Ben:This taste so good I think I will ask for seconds

Shanell:I second you Ben,Babe do you want some more

John:Of cause love whoever cooked this meal knows their way in the kitchen

We asked for seconds and they served us after a well we heard laughter coming from the kitchen with Thando and Travis running towards the table laughing

Ben:Guys no running in the house

Thando:Sssssssh daddy we playing hide and seek

Travis:Aunt Ndoni can't find us,promise you won't tell her

Shanell:(laughing)We promise,now quickly hide before she finds you

They did just that after a while Ndoni came out of the kitchen

Ndoni:Did you guys see Thando and Travis

Ben:(laughing)They didn't come this side

Ndoni:I thought I heard tiny voices speaking mmmmmh my mind must be playing tricks on me again

Shanell:You are mistaken dear,did they finish their dinner?

Ndoni:(smiling)Yes mam they even ate all their veges

Shanell:How did you convince them,I need the tip

John:Babe you will talk about this tomorrow remember she is looking for the kids

Shanell:(laughing)Oh my bad

Travis and Thando were giggling under the table even though Ndoni pretended not to hear

or see them

Ndoni:Oh my I wonder where they are,maybe I should try the kitchen again

Me:Possible they are hiding in the carborts

Ndoni:I will do just that

She walked away

Me:You guys can come out now

Travis:(giggling)Is she gone?

Ben:(laughing)Yes you guys are very good in hiding she didn't even see you

They quickly ran to the kitchen once again and laughter filled the kitchen

Ben:I think I am going to join them

Shanell:Me too it seems like the kids are having more fun than us

John:Why don't we all join them we all need to exercise especially after this meal

Millie:We will pass Angie and I are going to bed  
see you guys tomorrow

Us:Bye

Ben:Finally let's have fine people

Me:I think I will pass

Shanell:Come on Ty please

[07/04, 11:20] W: CHAPTER TWELVE

.

.

Bob:Boss we got news that the Dragon Slayer  
and his team went AWOL no one knows where  
there are

Me:Are you trying to tell me that they went  
missing with my diamonds do you know that  
those diamonds are worth 10 billion rands

Bob:Sorry boss not only that they have killed  
Mike will pulling this job

Me:You got to be kidding me since when did the

purples become so weak,I have been telling Rafael to tighten his security but no

Bob:And there is more boss I don't think you want to hear this

Me:Just tell me already

Bob:The person who stole your from you is your own brother Tyrese he is the DRAGON SLAYER

Me:Get my jet ready we are going to South Africa

Bob:Don't you think you should let this go I mean he is your brother after all and after what you did I don't think South Africa is a safe place for you,he might kill you

Me:Well he stole from me and I am going to make him pay whether he is my brother or not Tyrese has to pay no one steals from me and gets away with it.Connect me with the purple gang in South Africa tell them I am coming we need to start planning on how we are going to

hit big brother

Bob:Yes boss

.

.

He may be my brother but there is a fine line between wealth and family and I choose wealth over family,Tyrese has always been the loved twin my parents loved him more than me which is why I had them killed yes you heard it right I am the one who killed my parents...I am the reason why we grew up without parents till this day Tyrese only knows that they were hajakced and killed not knowing that it was a planned job...He thinks he owns the world I will show him what I am made off

My name is Bobby Gibson twin brother to Tyrese Gibson,you guys better warn my brother I am coming after everything he loves and cherish and that includes my niece and nephew and if he has a women will I will use her....but

don't worry I will strike when he least expect.

Tyrese "Dragon slayer" Gibson you have declared war with me dear brother

.

.

KOURTNEY

We were sitting in the kitchen when the kids walked in no man they all looked so adorable I wonder which one belong to who cause they all look beautiful

We were all done playing hide seek and they still wanted to play more games

Travis:Aunties please can we play something else

Gladys:Loves go to the lounge we want to use the kitchen now it's not safe for you guys to be here

Ella:Than who is going to play with us we are

having fun with you guys

Tam:Aunt Sam and Ndoni will play with you guys now go

Me:Mara I want to sleep

Sam:Oh Ndoni come on

We walked into the dining room

Shanell:We were about to come and join you guys

Ben:We also would like to play you guys that's if you do not mind

Sam:Of cause not the more the merrier now what do you have in mind

Tyrese:I have an idea

Shanell:Tell us

Tyrese:Why don't we play in groups of three,in each group we are going to pair up...

Ben:I am pairing up with Sam and we are the Green Team



John:Pairing up with my lovely wife we are the Blue team

Tyrese:(smiling)I guess Ndoni and I will be the Red team

Travis:What about us daddy?

Tyrese:This game is only for the grown ups why don't you guys go and watch some TV

Ella:My teacher says that watching too much TV is not good for my brain

Travis:She also said that some programmes are not suitable for children

Ben:Your kids are to smart for my liking

Ella:Is being smart a good or bad thing Aunt Ndoni

Hawu why is this child asking me the question now all eyes are on me

Me:Umh there is nothing wrong with being smart sweetly actually when you smart it shows

that you are unique and that God created you to be different

Travis:See Uncle Ben Aunt Ndoni says it's okay to be smart

Ndoni:How about you guys play some puzzle I heard it's good for the brain

Thando:Good idea Aunt Ndoni we don't want to GIGO our brains

Ben:What does that mean Thando?

Thando:Oh dad you are so slow it means GARBAGE IN GARBAGE OUT

Tyrese:What does that mean?

Me:It means that you need to be careful what you feed your brain cause if you feed garbage it will give you garbage

Tyrese:And then you say my kids are smart where as yours is on a other level

Sam:Today's kids are smart back in the day we

only cared about playing with dolls and dress up

Shanell:You can say that again,so where are the puzzles

Ben:In the store room...before that how are we going to play the game

Tyrese:Thought you would never ask,we should do some hiking

Sam:Isn't late for that I am mean it's already dark outside

Ben:No need to be afraid I got you boo

Me:Maybe we should do this tomorrow we already have plans

Tyrese:Fine by me than tomorrow morning it's going to be an couples outing

Me:Okay...guys we need to go now see you guys tomorrow

Ella:Are you leaving us

Travis:But why aren't you sleeping over

Sam:No babies we will see you guys tomorrow

Thando:Promise you will come back I want to show you my finished puzzle Aunt Sam

Sam:Of cause baby I will be here before you even wake up

Thando:Can you guys make us pancakes tomorrow

Sam:Of cause love now we need to go

Travis:Can we get goodnight kisses

Me:Of cause love come over and don't forget your other Aunties in the kitchen

Ella didn't want us to go

Tyrese:Tyrella stop what you are doing..or you are going to the naughty corner

Do you think Ella listened to her dad she kept on doing her own thing until her father snapped

Tyrese:Naughty corner for you young lady now

Ella:(crying)I....I. ..didn't meeean to daddy

Travis:Don't cry nunu berrie boo boo is going sit with you...Please don't cry

[07/04, 11:21] W: WAKEY WAKEY BREAKFAST TIME ^ \_ ^ \_ ^

.

.

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

.

.

## KOURTNEY

.

.

Not much happened the previous night we all had an early night still can't believe that Tyrese wants us to go hiking who is going to watch over the kids,my job is to play games with the little one I didn't sign up for "adult games"

Me:I am not going hiking with you guys today

Sam:What but why?

Me:Sam I am not here to go on couple games if Ty wants a partner he should ask one of the "loud ladies" mna I am going to spend my day with the kids

Sam:If you are not going than I am not going come think about it the whole idea is absurd

Me:Yeah and I am also meeting up with Gogo together with Bab'Dlamini

Sam:(laughing)Are you ready though especially now that you know they are dating

Me:I don't know it just feels wired that my grandmother is seeing someone I know she is not old but still

Sam:I know what you mean

Me:And I am happy for her she really deserves some loving and I am glad it's Bab'Dlamini

Sam:What if Bab'Dlamini wants to marry her than what?

Me:Hawu phela he needs to pay the ilobola money,my granny does not come in a cheap price though,he better start saving I am going to charge him 10 cows for my queen

Sam:(laughing)You crazy so what are we wearing today

Me:Something casual

Sam:Like what

Me:I am going to wear my maxi dress

Sam:I am going to wear my short summer dress than and let that hair down

Me:Aaaaah Sam you know I can't do that

Sam:Just once let your hair breath,we are not working in the kitchen today so no need to tie it up

Me:You not backing down are you?

Sam:Nope so untie that hair of yours and let it flow

Me:Yes mom,where is Gladys and the others?

Sam:They are already preparing breakfast and they are doing some cleaning before everyone wakes up...The good part about it is this after cleaning they are allowed to go and do their own thing

Me:That's nice I was starting to get worried I mean we are going to spend the whole day in the house well they are busy cleaning....If they are cleaning who is preparing breakfast?

Sam:Mr chef has arrived and I must say Babe he is hot

Me:You like saying people are "hot" where as they are not, you really have a bad eye when it comes to picking

Sam:(laughing)Says the one who always run when a guy approaches her

Me:(laughing)There is nothing wrong with running away phela boys are dangers



Sam:(laughing)You are always make a big deal of everything,now how do I look?

Me:Beautiful don't apply any make up,maybe an eye linear will do

Sam:You always need to do some touch ups

Me:No fam me and make up don't mix

Sam:Ooooooooooh weeeeh

.

.

We continued to dress until Gladys knocked on our bedroom door

Me:Come in

Gladys:Mmmmmmmmh you guys look good

Sam:Thanks love this is nothing compared to what you are able to do

Me:You can turn a rag into a dress

Gladys:(smiling)Ncooooh thanks anyways I am

done for the day and I wanted to call you guys to set up the table,the kids are already up their mothers have given them their baths

Me:What are you going to do the whole day?

Gladys:Me and the ladies are going out for lunch

Sam:You not going to be bored tell us when you leaving we want to accompany you guys

Gladys:Thanks be warned there is this other lady she is breathing fire

Me:Drama early in the morning

Gladys:And Ndoni you look beautiful without your eye contents and not forgetting how beautiful your hair looks when you let it down

Sam:See that's what I told her,do you now believe me

Me:(laughing)Yes and thanks Gladys....enjoy the rest of your day and don't forget to call us

Gladys:Will do now get going

.

.

TYRESE

I couldn't sleep last night I only slept in the wees of the morning...Ndoni's face kept on popping up in my mind,what's going on with me.

When I looked to my side the twins were not there guess they were not here they must be up

I went into my en suite and I decided a cold shower will do me good after doing my hygiene process I settled for a pair of shorts,t-shirt and flip flops

.

.

I made my way down stairs that's when I was met by a beautiful figure she had her back towards me and she was busy doing the table.I

couldn't tell who it was cause it was my very first time seeing her

Me:Umh excuse me

Just than she turned and it was Ndoni

Me:Wow you look Umh I mean.....Umh let me get some....umh water

Ndoni:(smiling)Sure boss

.

.

I went to the kitchen only to find Ben having a glass of cold water and the chef was busy laughing at him

Me:I can use a glass and then what's up I also want to hear the joke

Ben:Did you see how beautiful Sam looks,she is flames baba ooooooh man I don't think I can be around her....whenever I see her my stomachs starts to have these funny feelings

Chef:And those sensations are known as "butterflies" it happens when you are attracted to someone and I think you are attracted to her

Me:Hope you are not planning on making her a hit and run

Ben:My man I am planning on taking her as my wife

Me:(laughing)No you lying

Ben:(singing)

"Mamela apha skeem sam ngizomthatha ngo December"

Me:(laughing)Is it than what about Mpho?

Ben:Nha she is old news but Sam

My man started blushing

Ben:Enough about me and wena what's up with you...you were red as a tomato when you walked in here

Me:Same problem as you man Ndoni is flames

bruh I couldn't tell it was her..

she had her hair down

Ben:These girls are going to be the death of us

Chef:Seems like you gentleman have find the ones who hold the keys to your hearts

Ben:What no

Me:Of cause not that's impossible

Chef:(laughing)Both of you are still in denial

As we were busy going on and forth about this  
Travis came in

Travis:Daddy and Uncle Ben...Aunt Sam says  
the table is ready

Ben:Okay boy we on our way

Me:I think I need something strong

Ben:Still in the morning Ty...We are man we got  
this

Me:Yes we got this

.

.

Or do we?

[07/04, 11:21] W: HERE IS SOME CEREAL FOR  
THOSE WHO ARE NOT FULL

.

.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Me:Travier is Aunt Ndoni in the dinning room

Travier:No daddy she accompanied Ella to the  
bathroom

Me:Where is your mother?

Travis:She is still taking a bath only Aunt Angie is in the dinning room

Ben:Is Aunt Sam there too boy?

Travis:(confused look)Why are you asking me questions...she said I should call you

Chef:(laughing)Will you stop confusing the kid

Ben:(laughing)We didn't get your name

Chef:My name is Nathan

Me:Nice to meet you Nathan let's get going join us for breakfast when you done

Nathan:There is no need sir

Me:I assist

Nathan:Alright then see you in a sec

We walked out of the room and Stacy and Que were running towards us..When they arrived they had an early night due to the long flight so we didn't see them

Stacy:(screaming)Uncle Ty and Uncle Ben you



guys are here too(she than ran to us)

Me:(laughing)Yes sweety you were asleep when you got here so how was your flight

Stacy:It was good so this is the surprise dad was talking about I can't believe we are all her with my cousins of cause

Ben:I hope you are not dating young lady

Stacy:(laughing)I know what you are going to do to the boy

Ben:(laughing)What will I do

Stacy:You will break his neck

Que is the youngest of them all he is three he is one cute fella he reminds me of Travis

Me:My fella Que

He only smiled well I gave him a hug

His mom and dad walked down followed by Millie

Millie:What is the screaming all about

Stacy:Can't believe you still with her Uncle Ty(rolling her eyes)

Shanell:STACY

Stacy:It slipped my mouth mom

John:Apologies young lady she is your elder

Stacy:Sorry Aunt Millicent

Millie:Yeah sure,now what's for breakfast I want something meaty

Ben:That's what you get for drinking like a fish

Millie:I heard that

Shanell:Can we have breakfast in peace without you guys biting each others head

Ben:When are you leaving Millie

Millie:I don't think that is any of your concern

Ben:Will it is when I am the one who paid for this holiday house

Millie:You lying Ty paid for this

Me:You wish

Ben:Let me get to the point...you have one day left to leave together with this friend of yours

Millie:Haibo Ben please...I

Ben:I don't like repeating myself you are leaving first thing in the morning and I don't mind taking you to the airport

Me:I will buy them tickets

John:Since that is sorted can we have breakfast,kids come and take your sits it's time for breakfast

Thando:Sis Sam can you take a seat next to me

Sam:Umh I can't sweetie

Ben:No please join us the table is big enough for every one

Travis:Well I want to sit next to Aunt Ndoni is that okay daddy?

Me:Of cause baby

Just than Ndoni walked in with Ella one would swear they are mother and daughter

Ndoni:Sorry to keep you waiting but this young lady wanted her hair done just like mine(laughing)

Ella:Now we look like twins isn't that so daddy

Me:Of cause baby

Travis:But I am your twin

Ndoni:(laughing)I see that someone is jealous, of cause you are baby

Millie:And who gave you the right to touch my daughters hair(says with attitude)

Me:Come on Millicent it's not a big deal man

Millie:No it is she has no right to touch Ella hair she is my daughter,I see what you are trying to do Ndoni what what...you are warming your way up trying to get close with my kids so that their father falls for you will that won't happen girly go look for boys your age

Ndoni:You can call me Kourtney(smiling)and I am sorry for touching your daughters hair not going to happen again and I am not trying to win over their father...I am just a nanny and I am doing my job

Millie:Damn right it won't now go and tie her back to how it was

Me:That won't be happening,Ndoni take a sit

Travis:Mommy why are you being rude to Aunt Ndoni..

nunu berrie looks good her hair looks like Aunt Ndoni's right daddy?

Me:Yes and my princess looks good

Shanell:Umh maybe the kids should eat in the kitchen there is to much drama here

Ndoni:I will keep them company

Shanell:No love have your breakfast,Stacy come kids follow Aunt Stacy

They all obeyed and they left with Shanell closing the kitchen door

.

.

The table was quiet everyone was concentrating on their plate

Ben:THIS IS THE REASON WHY YOU SHOULD LEAVE...YOU ARE CAUSING UNECESSARY DRAMA

Millie:THERE IS NOTHING WRONG WITH WHAT I SAID...THESE NANNIES NEED TO KNOW THEIR PLACE

Sam:I think it's best we should go

Ben:There is no need for that

Ndoni:It's best

They stood up taking their plates with,now we were left with Millie and her friend

Ben:You need to be taught a lesson Millie but

today is not your day...start packing your rags  
you leaving today by the time I am done with my  
walk you better be ready cause even Ty won't  
stop me

With that said he walked out

Millie:Aren't you going to say anything Tyrese

Me:What is there to say you better start packing  
you don't want to unleash Ben side

John:(laughing)Aşk us we know him

Me:This beacon takes good man

John:The egg mmmmh

[07/04, 11:21] W: CHAPTER FIFTEEN

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Me:Maybe coming here was a bad idea Sam

Sam:It is only a small hiccup we can't allow people like Mealile Meal ruin our stay here

Me:But you heard what she said about me maybe I should tie my hair up

Sam:You are doing no such if Ty is going to fall for you he is going to fall in love with the kind of person you are speaking of which do you notice how he looks at you

Me:(laughing)I don't pay much attention to him

Sam:You should try paying attention then

Me:How does he look at me?

Sam:He looks at you with adoration especially when you are with the kids,the way he speaks with you is totally different to how he speaks to the rest of us like his tone towards you is calm and when you are not in the room his eyes start to wonder of as like he is searching for you and



when you enter the room his eyes beam up with excitement as if he is a child who is waiting for his favorite cartoon to show up and lastly there is this thick yet loud attraction between the two of you and I am sure that everyone feels it I mean the adults of course

Me:Umh why and you have picked this up as in like two days

Sam:Of course I have an eye of an eagle when it comes to things which have to do with LOVE they call me DR LOVE

Me:(laughing)Okay "DR LOVE" tell about what is happening between you and Ben

Sam:(blushing)What are you talking about?

Me:Since you are so good in analysing people I have been analysing both you and Ben and you my sister have got the hots for him...am I lying or not?

Sam:Okay okay okay I do like him but I don't

think he feels the same way,remember Ben is a well known player and I don't want to go down that road again

Me:You still not over Siyanda?

Sam:I am over him but after what he did to me he has left me scared for life I don't think I will be able to view another man in that way

Me:But not all men are like Siyanda he was a jerk and he took your love for granted,I know I don't know how it feels to be in love or to be in a relationship but love you deserve to be happy don't let the Siyanda saga rule you

Sam:It's not easy but I will try...now when are you going to admit the big boss has a thing for you?

Me:(laughing)When are you going to admit that the other big boss has a thing for you...no he does not

Sam:I don't know whether you are in denial or

what...when you admit that Ty has a thing for you

Me:He seems creepy what if he is abusive

Sam:Oh Ndoni let's get back inside before we hear one of your crazy theories remember you still haven't proved that Tam and Sandy are "pychopaths"

Me:You own me R500 only time well tell come on let's get back in maybe Ben BAE is looking for you

Sam:(laughing)Or maybe Ty Bae is looking for you too

Me:I love you man

Sam:And I love you too

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

I still don't know why Tyrese still tolerates Millie I get that she is the mother of my niece and nephew but she had no right to act the way she did

I was sitting in the veranda when Sam and Ndoni walked by...I don't know why every time Sam passes by I suddenly get hot...like I get hot flashes what is wrong with my body maybe I am coming down with a flu

My phone rang and it was Mpho

Me:What?

Mpho:Is that how you speak to the mother of your children?

Me:What do you want Mpho?

Mpho:I was calling to let you know that me and Khazimla will be coming to join you

Me:I thought you didn't want to come why the sudden change of heart?

Mpho:I miss Thando and also Khazimla misses his dad he is growing so very fast

Me:Angithi you kicked me out

Mpho:Cause I found you cheating with your so called friend

Me:I didn't cheat on you with Bonnie she is my friend how many times must I apologies

Mpho:Whatever we will be flying in later this evening

Me:So soon what's the rush

Mpho:Why so many questions you don't want me there I thought maybe you would like us to solve things and maybe we can try again

for the sake of the kids

Me:We will talk once you get here

Mpho:Okay we love you daddy

Me:And I love you guys too

Mpho:Kiss Thando for me

Me:Will do see you in a few hours

.

.

My relationship with Mpho is starting to I don't know I no longer feel the same way about her not that I was cheating on her on anything the last time I stopped my recklessness it was when Thando was born five years ago when I had her that's when I wanted to clean my act and be the best father to her and also the best man to her mother but that all started to change when Mpho started questioning my whereabouts I never gave her any reasons for her to doubt me,she started feeling insecure at some point she went as far as injuring my receptionist for she thought I was having an affair with her. There were times when she would threaten to leave with Thando if I ever leaved her for another women here I am solving Tyrese baby mama drama where as I also have Mpho in my

case

Ty:Want to talk about it?

Me:(sighs)Mpho is flying in today she is coming over to this side

Ty:You must be happy in this way you will sort things out(smiling)

Me:That's the thing I don't think I want to sort things out

Ty:Because Sam is in the picture

Me:Yes....No..I don't know I feel so confused like when same is around I feel like aaaah leave it

Ty:Come on talk to me

Me:I really don't know to say this but is it possible to love someone whom you have known for only 48 hours,is it possible that the more you think about it the more you see that the one whom you thought is the one is actually not the one,how do you control the feelings

which are raging within you.

Is love suppose to be this confusing now to top that up I have my baby mama who is coming up and I don't know what to do

Ty:I think you need to be honest with yourself and also with Mpho at the end of the day you know who your heart is beating for

Me:But why the sudden change of heart unless flip

Ty:What?

Ben:It's possible Millie had said something you do know they are friends right

Ty:Eish you are right

.

.

John walked towards he had a blank expression

Me:What's up John

John:I got bad news...They are no flights



available today and not only that all mode of transports are unavailable due to the strike

Me:Hang on a sec you mean all mode of transport than how is Mpho getting here

Ty:Possible she is using her car

Me:But she said she will be flying in

John:Her father owns a private jet

doofus

Me:Flip so that means Millie won't be leaving any time soon

Ty:Let us enjoy this peace and quiet you do know how they get

Me:My only worry is Sam and Ndoni

Ty:If one of them messes with Ndoni ncinci mmmmh we will see

John:Ooooooh boy maybe they should get signed in the BNB

Ty:That is an option

Me:Let's do it then

.

.

My name is Benjamin Vilakazi known as "Black Viper" in the under ground and I am 30 years and I am a well business man..Father to Thando who 5 turning six in three weeks and 6 months old Khazimla

[07/04, 17:08] W: CHAPTER SIXTEEN

.

.

NARRATED

.

.

The real reason why she was coming back was

because she received a call from Millie early in the morning Millie told her that if she does not come down then she will lose Ben to some poor nanny, at first Mpho didn't care about what Ben did cause he always comes back to her but then again it's possible that he won't come back this time around.

She is the reason why things between her and Ben are no longer the same truth be told she has been having an affair with one of her fathers associates at first she was doing it cause she was always feeling lonely until Wonder started noticing her. He gave her all the attention she wanted not only that he made her feel like she was the only woman in the world sadly he had to go back aboard and that was the end of their affair. Khazimla is Benjamin's son together with Thando one thing that Benjamin does not know is that Mpho did an abortion when she found out she was expecting Wonder's child everything is just falling out off

place Benjamin is no longer loving and caring and Mpho on the other side wants to be with Wonder

Mpho:Baby I know what I am about to do is not right but I really can't do this anymore I really love your father but he is no longer the man I want to spend the rest of my life with come to think about it...it's best if I leave you and your sister behind...mommy will always love you but it's best this way.

Khazimla kept on showing his toothless smile

Mpho:I hope your father will forgive me but I fell out off love for him,now you guys are going to stay with him I want to be free Khazimla you and Thandoyethu are holding me back,forgive me for not being the best mother but Millie will have to fight this battle on her own I have much more better things to do than to go after a grown man.

She gave her son a good bye kiss and gave the

driver the address in which he should drop him off

Mpho:This is it bye South Africa hello UK

With that said she left without Thandoyethu or Khazimla she made the right choice or did she?

.

.

Millie on the other hand was busy fanning herself after receiving a message from Mpho

Millie:How can she drop me like this  
aaaaaarghhh

Angie:What is she saying does she wants to take part in the plan

Millie:Mxm that pig does not want to involve herself in "unnecessary drama" she says

Angie:But I thought she wanted to..

Millie:That's what I thought too I guess I will be doing this on my own then

Angie:So she is no longer coming

Millie:No

Angie:What's the next plan cause as soon as the strike clears off we are on the first flight to Joburg and by then you need to have done some damage

Millie:Stop talking I am still coming up with ways to separate that Ndoni from my man,Tyrese is mine and mine alone I will be damned to allow a little girl steal him away from him

Angie:Whatever you do chommie I am supporting you 100% let's teach that girl that no body messes with Millie man's and gets away with it,poor Sam she is lucky

Millie:She is the least of my problems that one,Ndoni is the one that I want out of the picture even my kids love her very soon they will be calling her mommy

Angie:I have a plan

Millie:Come on out with it

Angie:This involves the twins though,as you said you want to remove Ndoni out of the picture

Millie:Yes

Angie:Since Tyrese loves his kids so much why don't we get Miss Ndoni in trouble since she is the one who looks after them she will take the blame and you my friend will play the victim and Tyrese will be comforting you

Millie:You speaking in riddles what is your point  
Agnes

Angie:What are the twins allergic to?

Millie:Anything that has nuts in it....hang on a sec(smiling)You friend deserve a drink

Angie:They don't call me Angie for nothing

Millie:Hahahaha I can't wait to see Tyrese blow

up once he hears that his precious Ndoni tired to kill his kids due to negligence

Angie:This calls for a champagne

Millie:Let's celebrate afterwards but won't it kill my babies

Angie:No they are going to be fine so what do you say

Millie:Let's do it friend...After all he is my man

.

.

The others were in the lounge and that include Ndoni and Sam

Ty:So when are we taking the hike it's close to midday now

Ben:Maybe we should do another game

Shanell:Like what?

Ben:How about truth or dare..I am sure everyone can play that



Ty:Sounds fine to me ladies?

Sam:I'm game as always,Ndoni

Ndoni:Nha I think I will pass...I am not feeling well

Sam:You were fine a few mins ago what has changed

Ndoni:Must have been something I ate,let me go and lie down

Travis:Aunt Ndoni where are you going

Ndoni:Going to take a nap  
baby

Ella:Can I come with you

Travis:Me too

Ndoni:Ummmmh maybe you should ask your father

Travis:Daddy please

Sam:There is no space for the three of you

Travis:Daddy bed is big enough for every one  
right daddy

Ty:Yes...um if you don't mind you can sleep in  
my room Ndoni

Ndoni:Ummmh okay...come you guys show me  
where your father's room

is

Ella:You are going to sleep next to me right

Travis:No she is going to sleep next to me right

Ndoni:I will sleep in the middle in that case both  
of you will have me

Ella:Yeeereh nap time...bye everyone

.

.

The others ended up playing cards until they  
were disturbed by a ringing door bell

Sam:I will get it

After a while Sam called out for Ben

Sam:Ben there is a special delivery for you

Ben:What is it

Sam:The man won't say

He then got up with the others following behind him,when he got to the door he was met up with Mike Mpho driver

Ben:And then?

Mike:Miss Tali asked me to bring you this

He opened the backseat and little Khazimla was strapped in his travel cot

Ben running towards his son

Ben:WHERE THE HELL IS MPH0

Mike:She told me to give you this,it has everything from Thandos and Khazimla birth certificates together with his next doctor appointment,I need to go now

Baby Khazimla started crying Ben strapped him

off his car seat but still he continued to cry

Shanell:Maybe he is tired let me take him

Ben gave him to her but still he continued to cry

Sam:Let me try

As soon as he was in Sam arms he stopped crying

Shanell:Wow

Sam:(baby talk)And why are you crying baby..mmmh...you so cute

John:What does the letter say

Ben:I will read it later,let me take him

As soon as he tired to take him back Khazimla started to cry again

Sam:Let him be

Ben:You can't carry him the whole day

Sam:Trust me I can,now where is his diaper bag we need to change his diaper

Ben:You mean you and me?

Sam:Yes you and me now come

Shanell:(laughing)I will make his bottle so long

Sam:He also needs a bath now come Ben

[07/04, 17:09] W: SMALL SOMETHING

.

.

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

.

.

## BENJAMIN

.

.

Khazimila was enjoying being around Sam I really don't know how the sleeping arrangements are going to work

Me:He has never being fond of anyone other

than his mother

Sam:(smiling)I guess the little guy loves me, isn't that right baby

Khazimila just revealed his beautiful smile

Me:I really don't know what I would have done if you were not here thanks Sam

Sam:No need to thank me,it's my job after all.

So when is his mother coming back

Me:She is not coming back

Sam:What do you mean she is not coming back

I started telling her what Mpho has revealed in the letter as much as I am relieved that she walked away,I am sad that she left her children behind

Sam:Wow this is hectic so what are you going to do

Ben:I am going to raise my children alone,I am glad she didn't take them with her to who

knows where

Sam:You know I don't mind helping you the kids

Me:I would like to ask you something,look I know you are only working for me just because we are here in East London but now I am thinking about when we leave and I want you to come with us

Sam:Umh wow

Me:You can take your time here's the thing I have seen how you treat Thando and now you have shown me that you are the best nanny to watch over my kids

Sam:Umh okay I will go with you it's not like I have something holding me back here

Me:What about your family

Sam:They don't need me....oh look seems like the little champion needs to take a nap,where should I put him

Me:My bed

Sam:You need to watch over him we don't want him falling

She gently placed Khazimila on my bed covering him with his small teddy bear blanket

Me:Don't you think it's too warm to cover him?

Sam:He is still small and they catch flu easily compared to adults,if he starts to sweat just remove the blanket

Me:Okay

Sam:And if you need me I will be downstairs

With that said she walked out,I still want to know why she wants to leave but that is a story of another day.

I sleep next to Khazimila who has his small lips pouted

Me:I promise to be there for you and your sister,having you guys has been a blessing and at the same time a wake up call...I promise to never leave your side when you guys need me I



will always be there.I love you guys both

.

.

Sam

Thando:Aunt Sam

She came running towards me

Me:Baby careful you will fall

Thando:Sorry aunty,where is daddy?

Me:He is upstairs sleeping with your little brother

Thando:Mila is here?

She was jumping up and down

Thando:Let me go and see him..Aunt Sam come with me

Me:Baby wait Mila is still sleeping he is very tired and I don't want you to wake him up

Thando:(tearing up)But I want to play with him

Me:And you will when he wakes up,why don't you go play with the twins

Thando:They are taking a nap with Aunt Ndoni in Uncle Ty room

Me:Mmmmh and Stacy?

Thando:She is busy with her phone you do know she doesn't want to play with me so

Me:Why don't we bake some cookies

Thando:(smiling)Really Aunt Sam?

Me:Yes baby let's go bake cookies for everyone

Thando:And chocolate cupcakes please

Me:With vanilla icing

Thando:Yes

Me:Than let's get going my little chef

.

.

As we were busy mixing the mixtures my phone

rang and it was my aunt

Me:Yes ma

Aunt:When are you going to send us money,you do know that you are the bread winner ever since you left for the city you forgot about us

Me:Ma I always send you money every month

Aunt:Heeeeh heeeeh wena

don't forget that you owe me

Me:Ma no disrespect but I owe you nothing all you did was treat me like a dog in my father's house and you know what I don't need you guys

Aunt:Heeeeh Samthandile you have grown guts at the end of the day you are a nobody and you will die a nobody...at least we won't see that charcoal face of yours never and I mean never set your foot here,you no longer have a home

Me:(crying)You can't kick me out of my father's house...you can't that's the only place I know as home

Aunt: Well you no longer have a home bye bye  
enjoy your new life as an oprhan...wait hang on  
a sec you have always been an orphan(laughing)

You can also keep that so called money of  
yours we don't need it charcoal

With that said she dropped the call, ever since  
my father died my Aunt who happens to be my  
dad's older sister was appointed to be my  
guardian I thought she was going to be a  
mother but in the end she turned out that she  
was only for my father's money. After splashing  
it around we became broke which lead me to  
not pursuing my studies. I dropped out of  
tertiary when I was doing my first year in  
Radiology after that I never went back to school  
I had to search for work well feeding my  
ungrateful aunt together with my cousin's who  
are only good for drinking and going around  
partying.

At that time I couldn't just pack and leave cause

I had no where else to go but now that Benjamin has offered me this job I am going to take it, and I will save up money to go and pursue my dream even if it takes me my whole life I am going to become what I want to be

Thando:Aunt Sam why are you crying, are you sad?

Me:Ooooh sorry baby I have something in my eye

Thando:When we feel sad my teacher always says that we should give each other hugs, come Aunt Sam my hug will make you feel better

Me:And why so?

Thando:(smiling)Because it is full of love

Me:(smiling)I think that will help me

She got off her seat and she gave me a hug

Thando:It's going to be okay, Thando is here to give you all the hugs you need free of charge

Me:(laughing)So you charge people?

Thando:No..Please don't cry

Me:(smiling)I won't now come on let's finish what we are doing

Thando:Yes mam

As much as I am all alone now but I know that God is with me,He knows what He is doing

[07/04, 17:09] W: BREAKFAST TIME ♥

.

.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

.

.

SAM

.

.

Thando:We done(clapping her hands)

Me:No baby we nearly done remember we still need to do the icing

The cookies together with the cupcakes were cooling down on top of the kitchen counter,we were now preparing the icing

Thando:Add more Aunt Sam

Me:(laughing)Okay okay

.what colours do you want us to use for our icing?

Thando:Purple,green,blue and yellow

Me:Ok let's check if we have any of those colourings in the pantry

Thando:Do we have them?

Me:Yes baby

We were busy laughing and singing when Millie together with Angie walked in

Angie:Smells good in here

Thando:Thank you

Angie:What are you making?

Thando:Cookies and cupcakes

Millie:She is not even her daughter,yet she is pretending to be a mother baking cookies and cupcakes

Angie:Yazi chommie I was thinking the very same thing she is trying to warm her way up just like you know who

Millie:Well they need to know that these man are taken..hang on a sec my man is taken

They continued to talk as if I am not in the kitchen

Millie:Yazi chommie I was thinking maybe you should try your luck with Ben since Mpho is not around and maybe just maybe you will be the soon Ms Vilakazi

Angie:(laughing)Do you think I stand a chance?

Millie:Girl what kind of a question is that,you have the looks and your style is on point unlike



some people who dress as if we are in the 30th century and should I tell you how beautiful your completion is phela you won't give Benjamin charcoal babies like someone I know

Angie:(laughing)Did you see how big her forehead is

Millie:I am looking at it right now hayi shame,it really shows that some people are not gifted....hayi chommie do a turn around sibone(let's see)

Millie:Umhle kodwa chommie yam aneSam(my friend is beautiful isn't that right Sam)

Me:Yes

Thando:Okay Aunt Sam we done now let's go and check daddy and Mila they must be awake now

Angie:I can come with you sweety

Thando:No I want Aunt Sam

Angie:Why sweety

Thando: Cause she is my friend... Aunt Sam  
come let's go

Me: Don't you want to bring your daddy some  
cookies I am sure he would like some

Thando: Good idea and maybe we can have  
them with milk... hurry up Aunt Sam

Me: (laughing) Okay okay there is no need for  
you to be bossy

Millie: Let's just go to the bar chommie we are  
not needed here

Angie: BnB mos

Millie: And I think it's best we explore East  
London, Sam darling tell Tyrese we are going  
out we will come back in a few days

Sam: Yes

Millie: It's ma'am to you

With that said they walked out, at least we won't  
be seeing them for a couple of days

.

.

We walked to Ben room gently opening the door she was carrying the plate full of cookies and cupcakes where as I was carrying the milk

Me:(whispering)Shhhhhh

Thando:(whispering)Oookkkkkkaaaaaaaayyy

Ben:And why are you guys whispering?

Me:We thought you were still sleeping

Ben:You thought wrong my lady,we wide awake isn't that right Kha

Thando:Daddy we brought you some cupcakes and milk

Ben:Mmmmmh who made them

Thando:Me and Aunt Sam,come and join us  
Aunt Sam

I was sitting on the chair well they were on the bed

Me:No sweety

Ben:I don't mind

Thando:Come on Aunt Sam the bed is big  
enough

for all of us

Me:Okay okay

I made my towards the bed

Me:Which side is your favourite?

Ben:Left side

Me:Good than I will take the right side

Thando:I will sleep next to daddy,Aunt Sam can  
have Mila

Me:(laughing)Two against two I see

Ben:More like two by two

Thando:Let's have some cookies

Me:What about Mila?

Thando:Babies don't eat sweet stuff

Ben:Says who?

Thando:Says me

Me:(laughing)Okay,you will only have one cupcake and two cookies young lady

Thando:But why?

Me:You still need to have your supper and we want to keep your sugar levels normal I don't want to run after a hyper Thando

Thando:(tearing up)Daa...dddddd....yyyy

Ben:Aaaa aaaaah my hands are tied

Me:You will have some later okay don't cry

Thando:You promise?

Me:I promise

Ben:Let's take a selfie

Me:There is no need for that

Ben:Come on Sam only one selfie

Thando:Yes one selfie Sam

Me:Let's vote than

Ben:You know you have lost cause Mila has no say in this

Me:Heeeeeey okay fine one selfie than and I mean it one selfie

Ben:(smiling)Yeah sure

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

A small voice woke me up

Travis:Daddy let go of Aunt Ndoni,why are you hugging her

I was still disorientated about what was going on

Ty:Go back to sleep Travis you going to wake

Ndoni and Ella up

Wait a minute how did he...I was sleeping in the middle...when did he..oh...

Ty:There is no need for you to tense up I am not going to do anything....YET...

What is that suppose to mean see how clueless I am

Me:When did you get here?

Ty:An hour ago

Me:Why did you move me last time I remember the twins were next to me

Tyrese was sleeping behind me with his hand around my waist I was in the middle together with Ella who was facing towards me with Travis on the other side...mmmmh guys on the sides and the ladies in the middle

Me:Can you remove your hand you are making me uncomfortable

Ty:(groaning)Go back to sleep Ndoni

Me:How can I sleep with your hand on my waist

Ty:You were perfectly sleeping with my hand on you in fact it has been on top of you for the past hour and half,you are a heavy sleeper Ndoni you can get easily kidnapped

We all fell asleep until I wanted to use the bathroom

Me:Tyrese let go I want to use the bathroom(shaking him)

Eishy he said I was a heavy sleeper where as he is sleeping like a bear

Me:(shouting)TYRESE

Ty:WHAT

Me:Let go off me I want to use the bathroom

He unwrapped his arms,facing the other way.

When I walked towards the bedroom door the door was locked



Me:Haibo

Ty:You can use my bathroom

Me:Why did you lock this door

Ty:Just use my bathroom Ndoni geez

Me:No need to be grumpy

tshni still don't understand why you had to lock the door

Ty:Did not want any disturbances from the outside world

I went to the bathroom came back out and the twins were awake

Ella:Aunt Ndoni(smiling)

Me:(smiling)Somebody missed me

Ella:Yes I did

Me:I am here

nje

Travis:I missed you too Aunt Ndoni

Me:(smiling)Me too baby

Travis:Aunt Ndoni I'm hungry

Me:Ask your dad to open up the door

Travis:Daddy daddy wake up

Ella:You know he is not going to wake up daddy sleeps like a a a

Me:A bear sweetie

Ella:Yes like a bear

Ty:I am awake you know

Travis:Open up the door

Ty:There is food in my closet

Me:Hebana(claps once)

Ty:I came prepared see there is no need for me to open up the door,come to bed Ndoni

Me:No

Ty:Just come to bed Ndoni

Me:I want to go Ty

Ty:You will go after I finish taking my nap

Me:Just tell me where the key is

Ty:No

Me:Aaaaah just sleep

Ty:That's the plan,my laptop is in my bag and the password is the twins date of birth you guys can watch some movies so long and don't worry they is plenty of food

Me:Who stores food in their closet

Ty:A father who happens to have a son who always wakes up feeling hungry

Me:Okay

Me:Kids let's watch some movies,bring that fleece blanket with you Ella

[07/04, 17:10] W: CHAPTER NINETEEN

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Me:You have something on the side off your mouth

Sam:(laughing)Where?

Me:Let me remove it?

Sam:Umh okay

Me:Come closer

Sam:No

Me:What to you mean no?

Sam:Umh I think it's best if we call it a day...I need...umh we can't do this...no you are going to play me....you can't be attracted to me I mean look at me...

I was watching her as she kept on going on and on

Me:Are you done?

Sam:Yes,can I use your bathroom

Me:Second door on your left

Sam:Thank you

She walked out,after what took like forever she finally came back

Me:Finally you back I was about to call out a search party

Sam:That wouldn't be necessary,I see the telebabies are sleeping once again

Me:(laughing)You calling my kids telebabies  
wow

Sam:(smiling)I know...I am just clueless when it comes to naming that's all

Me:Okay let me be the judge of that,what name are you going to give your son or daughter?

Sam:(smiling)I would name my daughter Warona which means Ours...I like the meaning

of the name because Our love would bring forth  
Our daughter who will be Our joy not only that  
she will also bring joy to everyone she meets

Me:(smiling)I like how you talk about Our  
daughter and our son name will be?

Sam:(laughing)No no no please I didn't mean it  
like that...uummmmh come to think about it I  
don't have a name yet

Ben:I will do the honors of naming our son don't  
worry...your man has got it covered

Sam:You are not my man...maybe I should leave

Me:Look Sam I was just joking

Sam:And I think it's best if I leave

Me:What will I do when Mila wakes up

Sam:You will do exactly what I showed you

Me:But I need you...I lo.....you know what never  
mind I think it's best if you leave close the door  
on your way out(angry)

Sam:Why are you mad?

Ben:Just close the door on your way out,I will give you a call if we need you

Sam:Umh okay still there is no need for you to shout at me

She walked out of the room leaving behind her floral scent

Why did I have to be mad it's not like I asked her out

Me:Stop giving her mixed signals and ask her out,what if she rejects me than what...we will cross that bridge when we get there...but first you need to apologise for snapping at her

Thando:Why are you talking to your self?

Me:Oh me no I was just singing baby

Thando:That does not sound like singing to me,where is Aunt Sam?

Me:Umh she went out

Thando:Is she coming back?

Me:Yes of cause you will see her at dinner  
love,now come it's time for you to take your  
bath

Thando:Who is going to watch Mila

Me:Me dummy now come your water is getting  
cold

Thando:Did you put in my Sofia bubble soap

Me:Yes Thando now get in and don't close this  
door

Thando:Yes dad,you seem grumpy

Me:I am not grumpy Thando

Thando:Are too

Me:Just take your bath Thando

Thando:Grumpy or not grumpy I still love you

Me:(smiling)And I love you too baby

.



.

TYRESE

.

Ndoni:Tyrese wake up I need to go

Me:Just relax Ndoni

Ndoni:You have been saying that for the past three hours

Ella:I want to see Thando daddy

Me:You can give her a call baby

Ella:Why are we locked up here daddy

Me:I just want to spend time with my soon to be reality

Ndoni:Yhooooo in your dreams buthi(brother)I already have a man

Me:Than dump him

Ndoni:Who are you the president son

Me:No actually I am the president and you my lady happen to be my FRIST LADY

Ndoni:Just open up the door Tyrese

Me:You leaving this room after you agree on going out on date with me

Ndoni:You not being serious

Tyrese:Suit yourself guess we are all going to be locked up here than

Ndoni:You can't do that

Me:Look Ndoni I like you and I would like to get to know you....I don't have time run after you, that's what kids nower days do

Ndoni:I think I am going to have a high blood pressure

Travis:Why are your cheeks turning pink Aunt Ndoni

Ndoni:You guys talk to much get ready for your bath

Ella:But we still watching Sofiaaaaa

Ndoni:And you will watch her after you done taking your bath

Me:I hope it's a way of getting rid of them

Ndoni:Mxm whatever Tyrese

Me:(smiling)You not leaving this room until you agree to go out on a date with me

Ndoni:I don't mind crying out for help you know

Ndoni prepared the twins bath water and she left them in the bath

tub

Ndoni:Don't close the door you too,stop splashing the water

Ella:Sorry Aunt Ndoni

.

.

Me:So what is it going to be?

Ndoni:Sis Tyrese can't you see you old enough to be my father hayi khandiyeke man(leave me alone)

Me:Whether your father is the same age as me then that's fine but the fact still remains I want you Ndoni

Ndoni:You can't have me Mr Gibson

Me:Your mouth is saying the opposite of what your body is saying Ndoni

I walked towards where she is standing

Ndoni:Don't come any where near me

Me:(smiling)Why not

Ndoni>Please

Me:Why do you fight it Ndoni,I know you can feel what I feel why don't we give it a try

Ndoni:How can we give it a try if you are busy forcing me to say yes and not only that you have me locked up against my own free will

Me:And I said that you can only leave after you agree on going on a date with me

Ndoni:Fine fine fine just do me a favour and open the freaking door

Me:Aaaa aaaaaa Ndoni not so fast,why are you running away

Ndoni:You are making uncomfortable Tyrese

Me:(laughing)In a good way though....I will let you go just because you look so adorable with those pink cheeks of yours..If I am able to make you blush than that means I still have my game on

Ndoni:Mxm don't flatter yourself can't you see the room is too warm

Me:Lol you can go Ndoni the key is under your pillow

Ndoni:WHAT

Me:(laughing)You can go

Ndoni:What about the twins

Me:I got this now go

Ella:Aunt Ndoni are you going to join us for dinner

Ndoni:Yes love I need to freshen up

Ella:See you in a bit than

Ndoni:Toodles

Twins:Toodles

Me:Goodbye kiss will do

Ndoni:Mxm go to hell Tyrese

[07/04, 17:10] W: CHAPTER TWENTY

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

It was now dinner time and Thando was excited to see Sam and little Mila was quite

Everyone was sitted but Sam was not among them

Me:Eeeeeh Ndoni where is Sam?

Ndoni:She won't be joining us for dinner

Me:But why?

Thando:She promised that she will give me my cookies

Ndoni:(smiling)Don't worry she told me that I should give you after you had your dinner

Thando:Yeeeeey,Ella did you try my cookies and cupcakes?

Ella:Not yet,Aunt Ndoni wants us to have our dinner first

Travis:We should thank Aunt Sam

Thando:Maybe tomorrow

Ndoni:Kids bedtime

Ella:Where is Stacy and Que?

Tyrese:They went to visit a family member they will come back maybe tomorrow or the following day,do you miss them?

Ella:Yes

Tyrese:We are going to give them a call after your bedtime story

Thando:Aunt Ndoni can you call Aunt Sam I want her to tuck me in tonight

Ndoni:(smiling)Let me give her a call,she can't say no to you princess

Thando:I will wait for her than,daddy will you going to wait with me right?

Me:Yes baby

Tyrese:Let me go and help Ndoni with the kids

Ndoni:We don't need you

Tyrese:I have nothing to do and besides we need to talk



Ndoni:Mxm you never listen,kids give your cousins and Uncle a good night kisses

Me:Night guys

Twins:Night uncle,Thando and Mila we love you

Me:And we love you too babies

They all left leaving me with my telebabies

Thando:Where is she daddy

Me:She is coming nana let's give her a few minutes okay

Thando:I hope she is not sad

Me:Why do you say that baby

Thando:While we were busy baking cupcakes she got a phone call and all of a sudden she was crying...don't worry daddy I gave her a hug

Just then Sam walked in her eyes looked red and puffy it was as if she was crying

Sam:Sorry I took my time

Me:No it's fine are you okay?

Sam:(faintly smiling)Yes,so you young lady asked for me

Thando:Yes I wanted you to tuck me and Mila in

Sam:Then let's go,let me carry him

Me:No it's fine

.

.

Sam:And then the princess kissed the frog which turned into a prince and they...

Me:(whispering)They are sleeping

Sam:(smiling)I will see you guys tomorrow,sleep tight

Me:Sam wait can we have a talk,not here

Sam:I will be waiting for you outside

.

.

.

.

.

[07/04, 17:11] W: CHAPTER TWENTY

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

SAM

.

.

Me:Let's take a walk

Ben:Where to

Me:The beach

We walked silently next to each other with no

one saying a word,we finally reached a rock and we both sat down facing towards the sea

Me:It's beautiful...I love how calming the ocean is...It has that effect of making me feel so...alive

Ben:Talk to me Sam what's troubling you

Me:I don't want to bother you with my problems

Ben:I asked you Sam what's bothering you

Me:I am just tired Ben,tired of being strong where as I am not.....ever since my father passed away everything started to change for me,my Aunt used me to a point where I thought it was normal until a friend of mine told me that my Aunt is abusing me she was treating me different compared to how she treated her children.My cousins "her children" were living the life.

.

.

Today she told me that I am know longer

welcomed at her house my father's house just because I didn't send her money, she is kicking me out of my father's house the one he spent his whole life building with his hard earned money...now I have nowhere else to go it has just dawned to me that maybe I am useless, I am worthless, unlovable the people I care about always leave me look at my mother for example I never got the chance to meet her for she died well giving birth to me and my twin who later died after we were two days old, maybe if he was still around I wouldn't be facing this cold cruel world alone was going to be my knight and shining armour, I am sure he was going to tell me I looked beautiful that I am a dark beauty that's what Ndoni always tell me, the person who tells me each day that everything is going to be fine tomorrow my motivation but sadly this world couldn't handle his beautiful being I sometimes wonder how he looked like, my father used to say we looked so much

alike even though he was a boy...I love him even though I did not meet him,we shared the same womb and everytime I look at Ella and Travis it makes me think of a brother I never met my twin brother Simphiwe,my father's one and only heir,my mother's baby son and my other half life is so unfair sometimes it took away all the important people in my life but hey they say only the strongest stand,question is Am I strong?

Nah I doubt that

.

.

And yet there are still people who go around talking as if I am not there not knowing that their words tear me apart inside,I didn't ask to be this black,I didn't ask to have this big forehead which everyone likes to make fun of...my aunt used to call me charcoal I got used to the name and hearing it from someone made me wonder if it is really true...maybe I am a

charcoal no man is ever going to love me just like Siyanda ex boyfriend who only wanted to sleep with me only to find out he didn't love me he even went as far as calling me names of which I don't want to say out loud what hurts me the most is the fact that he lied about me and the whole village believed him,I hate the fact that people think they can use me and toss me aside when they are done,I hate it when someone shouts at me why don't you just talk in a normal manner and I will listen to you,I am human too just because I smile all the time does not mean I have it under control,if you can closely see inside of me you will see it's only broken pieces of me and know I am not looking for someone to fix them but for people to understand that we are all human,instead of breaking each other a little compassion won't hurt but hey that is a dream upon ad dream right.....sorry about that got carried away

Ben:No no I don't mind listening to you Sam you

are

Me:A cry baby

Ben:You are unique,beautiful,loving,caring,kind and selfless and I wish to get to know you

.

.

Me:I have to much baggage Ben

Ben:Who doesn't...look Sam I like you alot and I would like you to give us a try if it doesn't work then we can call it quits

.

.

Me:What would a guy like you want someone like me

Ben:If it means that I will have to show you how beautiful you are then I plan on doing that Sam...I can't promise you the sky and the stars but this me Benjamin Vilakazi promise to be



there for you

Me:Don't make promises you can't keep or fulfil  
Ben

Ben:What do you want to me say cause you  
don't believe that I am into you and only you

Me:I just don't want to get hurt

Ben:I am human Sam and we all make mistakes  
but there is something that my mother always  
says "Benjamin rather trust the man who gave  
you the women instead of trusting the women  
because we all make mistakes,we are not  
perfect but there is someone who is perfect and  
who will never let you down and that is God"

So Sam rather trust in God who has brought me  
to you,look we can take things slow there is no  
rush

Me:What if you change Ben,what if you start  
using my family problem to your advantage  
than what

Ben:It's not going to go there

Me:Let me think about it first

Ben:And that's all I am asking look I am sorry about earlier

Me:Like I said we cool now let's get back before the kids wonder where you are

Ben:Let me drop you off first my lady

Me:I would like that

Ben:How about we have a picnic you,me and the kids

Me:What about Ndoni and the kids

Ben:I am sure Tyrese will figure something out

Me:I would like us to come to the beach

Ben:Mila hasn't been to the beach before

Me:(smiling)I am looking forward to it then and thank you for listening

Ben:Anytime you need to talk you no where to

find now let's go before you get a cold

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Me:Goodnight guys see you tomorrow

Ella:Night Aunt Ndoni,daddy aren't you coming to bed

Ty:In a sec baby I need to have a word with her

Travis:Let's sleep boo boo

Ella:I love you my sweet berrie

Travis:And I love you too boo boo

Me:Ncooooh this is sweet man

Ty:Ndoni let's have a talk downstairs

Me:Can't it wait till tomorrow I am tired Ty and I need to call my grandmother we were suppose

to meet today

Ty:This is only going to take a minute or two please

Me:Fine lead the one

.

.

He lead the way out of the veranda,it was chilling at the same time warm

Me:Isn't that Sam and Ben

Ty:Where?

Me:There...Ncooooh they look so good together(smiling)

Ty:You busy saying "Ncooooh" where as you haven't decided yet

Me:Can we not talk about that Ty

Ty:(smiling)She even calls me Ty mmmmh

Me:You no what I am leaving you I got better

things to do

Ty:Like what...look Ndoni I like you,you like me  
let's get it on

Me:Is that the best you can do

Ty:What do you mean?

Me:You need to do better than that of you want  
a date with Ndoni Kourtney Smith

Me:(singing)

Buy me a rose

Open the door for me why wouldn't hurt

Show me you love by the look in your eyes

These are the little things I need the most in my  
life

Ty:Are you done,who ever told you that you can  
sing was lying vha you even caused a crack on  
the window(laughing)

Me:Mxm goodnight Tyrese

As I was getting up from the chair he stood up walking close to me,he than picked me up carrying me over his shoulder

Me:TYRESE PUT ME DOWN RIGHT NOW

Ty:Not happening

Me:WHERE ARE YOU TAKING ME...TYRESE NO NOT THÉ WATER PLEASE

He just ran towards the ocean and dropped me

Ty:Ndoni will you go out on a date with me

He was on his knees bare in mind we are both wet

Me:Mxm you need to be taught wena

With that said I left him kneeling down

What a lame to ask me out

Phela in the movies guys buy chocolates and Roses not this aaaaah Tyrese though

.

.

NOT EDITED

[07/04, 17:11] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Me:Ndoni wait

Ndoni:Just go to bed Tyrese

Me:Okay fine but hear me out first

Ndoni:Two minutes

Me:As I said before I am going to say it again,I am not used to asking a girl out all I know is that my looks do the talking,but that's not the point look Ndoni I would like to go out on date with you

Ndoni:(smiling)Was that hard to say

Me:(laughing)Don't push it ummh sorry about what I did earlier on

Ndoni:Water under the bridge,look Tyrese I will see you tomorrow need to get out off these wet clothes before I get a cold,I suggest you do the same

Me:(smiling)Goodnight Ndoni

Ndoni:Night sleep tight

Me:And dream about me

Ndoni:Dreaming about you is like watching a horror movie

Me:(laughing)The things that come out of that mouth of yours,that's one of the things I like about you...you not afraid to speak your mind but be careful it might land you in trouble

Ndoni:I will try and tame it a bit

Me:I am not saying you should change how you



Speak but some things are better left unsaid because you might hurt someone without realising it, I don't mind listening to your crazy opinions but in the near future just be careful

Ndoni: Okay... I need to go

Me: Aren't you going to wait for Sam

Ndoni: By the way things are I don't think they are planning on coming back anytime soon

Me: Then let's get going so when are we having our date

Ndoni: How does tomorrow sound?

Me: Perfect tomorrow evening?

Ndoni: See you then (smiling)

Me: You are going to see me in the morning remember you need to take care of the kids

Ndoni: (laughing) I thought you were giving me a day off since you know, have asked me on a DATE and I need to pamper myself that's what

most girls do mos

Me:Not happening

Ndoni:(laughing)You such a bore

Me:It's so weird that we are having a conversation without being in each others throats

Ndoni:And you are the reason behind our fights

Me:No I'm not...They say those "little fights" keep the love burning

Ndoni:(laughing)let me get going I have a feeling that my gogo is calling me she doesn't like it when I don't answer my phone

Me:Am I being to forward if I ask for you tenz

Ndoni:You will get them after you pass your first test

With that said she walked away swinging her hips to the right and left in my opinion she was seducing me..Ndoni is going to be mine one

way or other I am going to make sure it.

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

I was chasing her around

Sam:(laughing)Ben stop it we need to get back

Me:But I enjoy spending time with you,just one more hour please(puppy eyes)

Sam:(laughing)That look is not going to work on me Mr Vilakazi

Me:Mm mm mm I love how you call me Ms Vilakazi

Holding her around the waist,we stood still just looking each other in the eyes allowing her souls to do the talking

Sam:Kiss me

It came out as a whisper

I slowly bent down my head,holding her shaped heart face in my hands.

My lips touched her soft beautiful lips,she tip toed on her feet as she wrapped her small hands around my neck.

For that moment it felt like we were the only people left, a soft moan escape her mouth

Me:(singing)

When the sun dies or raise

And the starts fade from view

Our love will remain real and true

Through the distance

Sam:(singing)

When you say you love me

No I love you more

When you say you need me

No I need you more

Ben:I love you,I know it's too soon but what we have is real and true...I love you for who you are  
Sam

Sam:And I love you too

Ben:Let's get some rest love we will talk in the morning

.

.

My day went from bad to good I will always remember what we just shared,and I am planning on having more of these days with her

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Tyrese walked me to our cottage, what a gentleman he is. He only gave me a baby kiss on the forehead I don't know why I sound sad about it cause I wanted him to kiss me

And I was right Gogo has been calling me as I was about to give her a call she called me

Me: Mama

Gogo: Baby how are you?

Me: Ma I'm good we all good I hope you also good

Gogo: Of cause baby listen I am sorry we couldn't meet today something came up

Me: No it's fine ma I miss you

Gogo: And I miss you too is everything fine baby

Me: No...yes...I don't know mama

Gogo: What is it Ndoni yam talk to me

Me: It's embarrassing I don't know how to tell you

Gogo:Just say it Ndoni how am I going to help you if you are hiding things from me remember no secrets

Me:Okay mama look I am going to be honest with you

Gogo:I'm all ears baby

Me:I think I have a crush on someone and he has asked me on a date

Gogo:(laughing)My baby is growing so who is he

Me:My boss

.

.

Gogo:Ndoni don't even think about it,he is your boss for crying out loud matter of fact he is old just stay away from him

Me:Yes ma'am

Gogo:And you not going out with..yazini you are

coming back home as in tomorrow you can transfer him his money I won't have my child sleeping with a grown man

Me:We are not even dating yet you thinking that far

Gogo:Yet...what will happen when he wants to sleep with you heeeeh than what,He will use and leave with a big stomach,doesn't he have kids a woman in his life what does he want with you

Me:Okay ma I heard you

Gogo:Yazini start packing you and Sam are coming back and if it means that I need to drag you both I will do so,where is Sam?

Me:Ummmmmh Ummmmmh

Next thing I dislike about myself is that I can tell a lie

Gogo:Ndoni where is Sam

Me:She is...is outside with Gladys



Gogo:Ndoni why are you lying Gladys left she had an family emergency

Me:But she said she was going out with Tam and Sandy

Gogo:Yes but she got the call so I am asking you for the last time where is Samthandie

As I was about to speak Sam walked in looking all beautiful she even had that glow

Me:Gogo wants to talk with you

.

.

SAM

.

.

If loving someone feels like how I feel for Ben than it's worth the shot...I know it's too soon but as long as we take it slow

I am so happy that I can't wait to tell Ndoni

about what just happened.

As I walked in the room she gave me the phone saying that it's Gogo

Me:Mama wam

Gogo:Mama wam my foot where do you come from

Me:I was with...with Gladys ma she needed my help

Gogo:Since when do you lie Samthandie heeeeeeeh in case you didn't know Gladys has a family emergency

Me:But she said she was...

Gogo:Oh so nawe you busy with the boss you only 20 years old heeeeeeh start packing your stuff you and Ndoni are going to spend the rest of your holidays with me

Me:But I need to work

Gogo:I will work you guys will stay at home,start

packing your clothes Bab'Dlamini and I are coming

With that said she dropped the call

.

.

Me:What was that all about how did she

Ndoni:We in deep trouble

Me:Say that again what are we going to do

Ndoni:Let's start packing we don't want Gogo to go all Vergeta on us

Me:(laughing)We will go all Goku on her before she arrives I want to tell you something

I started telling Ndoni about everything including what my Aunt said

Ndoni:Sorry about your Aunt you have a home with me and Gogo,I know we can never be your family but we love you regardless we are already sisters and I don't mind sharing my

room with you and since I am doing my final year in Matric we can start applying for varsity and busarries

Me:(crying)I don't deserve you guys

Ndoni:(crying)Of cause you do..you are my sister the only one whom I am going to confine in starting from today hayi Gogo

Me:(crying)I love you

Ndoni:And I love you too now let's start packing before Gogzilla arrives

Me:(laughing)She is coming with her man

Ndoni:(claps once)Eisshy

[07/04, 17:12] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Me:So you were still telling me about you and Ben Bae

Sam:(blushing)Oh Ndoni the way he kissed me....and then he sang me a song

Me:(laughing)Yazi Gogzilla is a party pooper man,my sister just had the most romantic time of her life and yena she is ruining that

Sam:(laughing)Come on Ndoni you know that Gogo is only looking out for us

Me:This means I will miss my date with Ty

Sam:Since when do you call him Ty...hang on he asked you out on date

Me:Yes and I am no longer going

Sam:We will come up with a plan you have to go out after all it's your first date EVER

Me:How am I going to sneak out,you of all people know that Gogo comes back from work

at 18:00 sharp

Sam:Then you guys will have to have your date during the morning/afternoon

Me:Are you really going to cover for me...it's not like I want to go anyway he forced me too(sighes)

Sam:(smiling)Stop lying to yourself Ndoni...I know you like Tyrese just that you are scared of what people are going to say

Me:The age is the problem,dude he even has grey hair

Sam:(laughing)Oooh hayi Ndoni he doesn't look old though

Me:Maybe I should let it be

Sam:What if Ndoni Tyrese is the one,do you want to go on with life wondering "what if" you went on the date than what,just go tomorrow and see where it takes you guys

Me:Okay maybe I will give it a try he is not bad

looking

Sam:It's not only about the looks Ndoni,looks are a bonus remember fall inlove with someone for their personality,looks fade but the person remains the same

Me:Are you trying to tell me you didn't go for Ben for the looks?

Sam:(laughing)Girl that guy is flames jealous down and his personality is a bonus...more like cherry on top

Me:Tell me what do you like about him so far

Sam:I noticed that he is a good listener,I like the kind of a father he is to his kids even a stranger can see that Benjamin lives for his kids and there is nothing he wouldn't do for them,he is has a cheesy boy kinda vibe nyana but so far good and his lips ooooooh lawd take me now....that's what I have picked up about him so far and you tell me what you like about Tyrese excluding the looks

Me:Mmmmh nothing

Sam:Come on Ndoni I know you are lying

Me:Okay fine,I like how he goes after what he wants he doesn't take no for an answer,I like how he is good with the twins just like Benjamin there is nothing Tyrese wouldn't do for his kids,I like that he does not try to be someone that he is not,he doesn't pretend he is that "take me or leave me" kinda guy even though I am not a fan of RUDE people I like his Rude personality it makes him hot

Sam:(laughing)Nje ngephelele(like chillies)just give him a chance at the end of the day people are going to be judgmental about your relationship with him but it is up to you if you are going to allow people to choose for you

Me:Thanks Sam,so are we giving these guys a try

Sam:After they pass the waiting period than they will qualify



·  
·  
Me:Deal I wonder uphi uMa wakho

Sam:(laughing)Ooooooh so today she is my mother what happened to the "Queen of my heart" my "Kentucky bone"

Me:Aaaaaaawwwwe andithi ufuna ujola yedwa(she wants to be the only one who dates)

Sam:(laughing)Today will be the last time you open that crazy mouth of yours

Me:Lesson learnt lips sealed

Sam:But that does not mean we should not go and ask her for advice remember she is older and much wiser than us,we may not yet understand why she is doing it but let's not forget it's all because she loves us

Me:I know,aren't we going to tell the guys we can't leave just like that and I also need to transfer Ty money

Sam:Here I thought I am a millionaire only to find I am back to having my bank balance to 0.00

Me:(laughing)So what are our plans for this holiday since we won't be working

Sam:Maybe you can show me around your neighbourhood and maybe I can meet that crazy friend of yours Snegugu

Me:We are going to visit her tomorrow

Sam:I don't do parties Ndoni to me nice time means spending time indoors in my blankets watching good movies or reading a good book

Me:You and me same WhatsApp group,we are only going see what she wants cause she has been calling me none stop...let's go see the guys than,goodluck

Sam:Don't do something I wouldn't do

.

.

Me:I am hoping he can kiss me,when he accompanied me he only gave me a kiss on the forehead where as wena Ben went all smoochy smoochy on you

Sam:I asked him to kiss me

Me:You lie

Sam:Really

Me:I am going to ask him then...heeeeh ugal can't even kiss hayi I will stick to "mcwwwwwaaaaaaaaa mama"

Sam:(laughing)Heeeeh hayi you getting worse by the day

Me:Ntoni(what)I used to kiss Gogo like that,I am going to be like "mcwwwwwaaaaaaaaa Tyrese" if he stays than he is the one,he needs to love me with my craziness

Sam:Let's go

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

When I got to my room I took a quick shower and I went to bed not forgetting to thank God for protecting me and my loved ones.

Still can't believe that Sam said yes and I promise to put a ring on it very soon girls like her a very rare to find she is for keeps

I was still heading to Lala land when I heard someone knocking

Me:Who is it?

Sam:It's me Sam

.

.

I quickly got out of my bed and made my way to the door making sure not to make any noise

cause Mila is a light sleeper

.

.

Opening the door there she stood my future wife looking all good in sweat pants paired off with a big hoodie and grey slippers, she has let her afro down she looked more beautiful without that black crayon what do you call it..yes a eye linear....damn can one look so beautiful like Sam

Sam:Staring is rude

Me:Is it a crime to admire what belongs to me?

Sam:It's not yours until you put a ring on the finger

Me:And don't mind calling my uncles,just say the word and it is done....A man needs to mark his territory

Sam:And how will I mark mine....aaaaarrgh Ben that'd not the reason why I am here

Ben:(laughing)Sorry my love,were you having bad dreams don't worry daddy is here we have plenty of space for you

Sam:(laughing)Maybe in the near future not now,look I am here to tell you that I am leaving tonight the reason being it's because...

Cutting her short

Me:WHAT

Sam:Just let me finish

Me:(silent)

Sam:Ben,look the reason why I am leaving it's because my grandmother find out about what is going on here so she is coming to pick me and Ndoni up,I will transfer your money

Me:I am sorry Babe...There is no need for you to do that

Sam:No I insist

Me:So what am I going to tell Thando

Sam:You can come and drop them off then pick them up later

Me:Isn't she going to mind?

Sam:She is not home during the morning and day she only comes back home in the evening

Me:So we still on for tomorrow

Sam:Of cause love

Me:Let me keep you company as you wait for your grandmother,speaking of which I thought you said you had no one

That's when she started telling me about Ndoni and her grandmother

Me:She is a very kind women and she means well

Sam:I hope that this is not going to change anything between us

Me:As I said before I am going to say it again,I AM IN FOR YOU AND I AM NOT GOING

ANYWHERE

Sam:I love you

Me:(smiling)And I love you too,want some ice-cream while we wait

Sam:Yes place

Me:Let me get my phone wait here don't go anywhere

Sam:(smiling)As if

Me:Serious Babe I want to spend these last mins with you

Sam:You are going to see me

Me:Still

Sam:Okay fine hurry up

.

.

TYRESE

.



.

Me:You not being serious

Ndoni:Heeeeh you can even ask Sam

Me:Ndoni just admit you want to join me in bed  
come on love,that you want my hands to wrap  
you like I did earlier on

Ndoni:Mxm

Me:Do you expect me to believe what you have  
just told me,like who in their right state of mind  
will tell their parent that they are seeing  
someone

Ndoni:Oh so you are saying I am crazy

Me:That is not what I am saying Ndoni

Ndoni:You used "who in their right state of  
mind" you implying I am crazy

Me:Ndoni come to bed the time is close to  
midnight we will have this talk later

Just then her phone rang

Ndoni:Ma,yes we done okay bye

Me:Flip you being serious

Ndoni:Now you believe me

Me:What about our date

Ndoni:Let's go downstairs you already wasted my time and wear a t-shirt

Me:(smiling)You can't handle all of this

Running my hands through my abs

Ndoni:(laughing)Heeeeeeh amen let me get going then

Me:Hold on I'm coming

I quickly changed into my tracksuit

Ndoni:Now you look better

Me:Just say you don't want me showing off your assets

Ndoni:Aaaaaaaah let's go

.

.

We were joking as we made our way downstairs,laughter was coming from the kitchen

Ndoni:That must be Sam and Ben

Me:Ben so this is true man

Ben:Thought she was lying

Me:Magogo has no chill

Ndoni:Heeeeh that's our mother wena

Me:Can we also have some ice-cream

Sam:Help yourselves

Me:Babe do you want a spoon are we going to use the same one

Ndoni:I want my own spoon

Me:Nha we going to use the same one just like Sam and Ben

Ndoni:Then why did you ask me if you knew,we

were going to use the same spoon

We fed each other mmmmh mmmmh

Sam:It's getting hot in here Ben let's give them some space

Ben:But I am still having some ice-cream

Sam:Haysuka khaphakame(get up)

Ben:But...

Sam didn't wait for him to finish she took the ice-cream tub with them leaving me with my Ndoni

Me:You have some ice-cream let me lick it off you

Ndoni just turned pink in a instant

Me:(laughing)You should see how pink you look right now...I am going to call you Pinkie..what is mine in Xhosa?

Ndoni:Wam

Me:Yes you are pinkie wam

Ndoni:Tyrese when are you going to kiss me?

Me:(coughing)Oooh what I need some water

Ndoni:Did I say something wrong?

Me:No no no just you caught me of guard that's all

Ndoni:Andithi you want to lick me as if I am a lollie pop just kiss me wethu

.

.

I thought I was a straight talker but Ndoni here is on another level

[07/04, 17:12] W: SMALL SNACK

.

.

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Me:So what are you going to do about what I have just said Ty

Ty:Ummmmh ummmmmh wow Ndoni

Me:And what's with the coughing?

Ty:Just have something in my...

Me:So are you going to make me beg

Ty:(blushing)Umh when is your grandmother getting here,wow she is really taking her time...eeeeeeh don't you want us to join the others....you know what let's join the other's

Me:You can go I will wait here...just need some time alone especially now that Gogo is coming

Ty:Ndoni look..It's

Me:No need to example yourself can you call Sam

Ty:Ndoni let's talk about this...why are you pretending like this didn't happen...are you angry that I did not kiss you

Me:(faking laugh)Me oh no I'm good just call Sam for me

Ty:Okay(worried look)

He walked out of the room few minutes later  
Sam walked in looking all worried

Sam:Baby is everything okay?

Me:Can we wait for Gogo outside(tearing up)

I felt a lump foaming in my throat,you know that burning sensation you have when you want to cry but something is holding you back that is how I am feeling right now

Sam:Okay love let me get my bag,Ndoni whatever you do don't cry here okay just hold it in till we get home

I only nodded

Sam:(hugging)It's okay to be fine love don't worry

Me:It...it....hurts(crying)

Sam:Tell me what happened

Me:I asked him to kiss me...what hurts me the most is that he pretended as if I didn't say anything...a.....a straight forward answer would have been okay you know(crying)

Sam:Oh baby I'm sorry..maybe he has a good reason

Me:What good reason would that be

Sam:Maybe he doesn't want to rush you into doing something you are not comfortable in

Me:I get that Sam but he should have told me

Sam:Let's get you cleaned up before Gogo gets here

.

.



Speaking of the devil he walked in

I couldn't read his facial expression for he seemed angry

Me:We need to get going Sam

Ty:Ndoni can I have a word with you,why are your eyes and nose red have you been crying

Me:Just an allergy reaction

Ty:Sam can you excuse us please

Me:Sam don't go I need you

Ty:Sam Ben is asking for you

Me:Sam Ben would come here if he wanted you

Ty:Why are you being so childish?

Me:That's because I am a child Tyrese

Ty:Mxm when you have grown from your childish tendencies you no where to find me

Me:Mxm

Ty:To think I would have kissed you maybe I

made a good choice by not kissing you, you still a kid and now you are crying just because of a stupid kiss.... Well Miss Smith this is not one of those fairy tale story's where prince kisses a princess

Sam: I think you have said enough Tyrese

Me: No let him say his piece it's clearly that he has more to say

Ty: Nah I'm done, close the door on your way out

.

.

With that said he left the room

Sam: Yoooooooooh and then

Me: Maybe it's one of those days

Sam: Don't let what he said bring you down okay

Me: Maybe it's best this way now all I can do is to concentrate on getting that Bachelor degree

Sam: Yes baby

Me:At least Ben is still around

Just then Ben walked in,why do they seem so offish we were fine a while ago now what has changed

Ben:Ndoni can I have a word with Sam

Me:I will be waiting in the living room

Sam:Okay love

.

.

SAM

.

.

Me:So love what's up

He brushed off my hands...okay

Ben:Look Sam this is not working for me

Me:(laughing)You joking

right.....hahahahahahaha good one Babe

Ben:(slient)

Me:Oooooooh you are serious...what changed all of a sudden we were fine a few minutes ago,is it about the call you received earlier on

Ben:I don't like repeating myself,look Sam you are a very nice girl and any guy would be happy to have you a wife but as for me it's working

Me:Why are you hurting me you promised me  
Ben

Ben:That was all a lie

Me:So what transpired between us a few hours ago was all just an act for you...wow you really know how to act you deserve an Oscar

Benjamin....you no what screw you I don't need you I was doing just perfectly fine without you...you can expect that money of yours by the end of tomorrow....to think I was falling for you...you just make me sick Benjamin Vilikazi  
sies

.

.

As I was walking away Thando came down

Thando:Aunt Sam

Me:Heeeey baby why are you still up

Thando:I want some water and daddy wasn't there,who's bags are these

Me:(sighs)I'm leaving tonight love

Thando:(tearing up)Why did I do something bad...I..I...pro....mise to behave next time please don't go you are my best friend(crying)

Me:Oh baby please don't cry you were and still are an angel you did nothing wrong

Thando:Then why are you leaving,stay with us daddy talk to her please

Me:Honey I can't please don't cry

Thando:(crying)I..I..want to come with you

Me:Here's what you can visit me tomorrow

Thando:Daddy can I visit Aunt Sam at her house

Ben:Yeah hurry up we need to get you to bed

Thando:Okay can Mila also come

Me:That's up to your dad,now have your water and go back to bed

Thando:Promise you not going to leave me

Sam:I promise

Thando:Can you write down your number so that I can call you whenever I miss you

Me:Of cause baby go and look for a pen and paper and I will write it down for you

Ndoni:Gogo is here

Me:I'm coming

Thando came back with what looked like a diary

Thando:This is my diary write it down here Aunt Sam

Me:Okay baby...There you go I need to go now  
kiss baby Mila for me

Me:Bye Ben

Ben:Sho

With that said he walked away with Thando  
leaving me confused and hurt at the same time

.

.

Gogo gave us one hell of a lecture a part of me  
is glad that she came for us at least now I know  
Benjamin was only playing me and I was just a  
fool to fall for a guys trick once again.

Maybe it's time I focus on myself what  
happened between me and Ben I will always  
cherish it even if it was only for a few hours

[07/04, 17:13] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR

.

.

## BEFORE THE BREAK-UP

.

.

The guys were busy dissing each other while Sam was listening to their whack rhymes. Tyrese was still trying to figure out what really happened back there (kitchen) cause he felt bad by dismissing Ndoni like that he was falling for her deeply and the more he learnt about her the more he draw closer to her

Ben:Are you telling me you just walked out(laughing)without kissing her?

Sam:(laughing)Ben stop it man

Ty:This is not funny guys..you don't understand this is all shocking to me in a good way though,like out of all the women in my life none of them ever had the guts to you know,ask me for a kiss.And Ndoni wow she just knocked me out of my...eish even words fail me



Ben:(laughing)On a serious note you should go back there and apologies,we might be joking about this you know how women are

Sam:Ben is right go talk to her you know what they say actions speak louder than words

They were than disturbed by a call

Ty:Don't answer it

Ben:It could be important you do know that Shakes does not call me unless it's a matter of life and death

Shakes is Benjamin's right hand man,he is his eyes and ears

Sam:Who is Shakes

Ty:He is our friend from Joburg

Ben:Shakes what's up my man,miss me already?

Shakes:Boss you not going to like this

Ben:I'm listening hold on,babe can you give us a moment we need to take this call

Sam:Is everything okay?

Ty:Oh I forgot to tell you Ndoni asked if you can join her in the kitchen

Sam:(laughing)And you only telling me now  
wow

Ty:It slipped my mind Sam chommie(laughing)

Sam:It's okay see you guys in a sec  
then(smiling)

Sam walked out of the room and they made their way to the study room,it's more private

.

.

Ty:What's going on

Ben:Shakes is on the other line and he has bad news

Ben:Shakes you can talk we are listening...putting the phone on loud speaker

Shakes:A word is out in the streets that Toby

has landed in South Africa and by the looks of things he is out for blood. My source says that he wants to hunt down the men who stole from him

Ty: The diamond's

Ben: Flip flip flip flip

Shakes: And not only that Boss

Ben: TALK SHAKES

TALK

Shakes: Biza has sold you guys out

Ty: WHAT THE

Biza works for Tyrese he was his spy in the purple gang

and right hand man meaning he knew about Tyrese where abouts

Ty: WHICH IS WHY HE HAS BEEN QUIET HE HASN'T SAID ANYTHING ABOUT WHAT IS HAPPENING IN THE PURPLE GANG, THAT

## PIECE OF DOUBLE CROSSED ME

Shakes:Not only that he gave the BK together with the Purple gang your current hiding place they know where you guys are and not only that pictures have been going around notifying every BK and Purple gang to look out for you and...

Ben:WHAT PICTURES

Shakes:THEY HAVE PICTURES OF YOU SPENDING TIME WITH YOUR NEW MAIDS/WOMEN BOSS THEY KNOW THEM EVEN YOU DRAGONSLAYER THEY KNOW ABOUT THE GIRL

Benjamin banged the table so hard that Tyrese knew what was about to happen if people think that Tyrese is the baddest they haven't seen how bad Ben is,only John,Tyrese and Shakes know a side of Ben in which not many know about.

Shakes:I need to go now I will keep you posted..

I suggest you start moving as in now

With that being said he dropped the call

Ben:My worst fear has been confirmed we need to let them go Ty

Ty:No we can't do that look I am going on a date with Ndoni

Ben:DAMMIT TYRESE CAN'T YOU SEE THEY ALREADY KNOW ABOUT THEM AND ALL YOU CARE ABOUT IS YOUR STUPID DATE,HER LIFE IS IN DANGER

Ty:AND WHO'S FAULT IS IT

Ben:OH SO WE ARE GOING TO PLAY THE POINTING GAME RIGHT NOW

Ty:IF YOU DIDN'T TAKE THE DIAMONDS WE WOULDN'T BE HERE

BEN:AND I ASKED YOU TO RETURN THEM BUT NO YOU DECIDED TO HIDE THEM TO WHO KNOWS WHERE,IF YOUR BROTHER IN ANY WAY HURTS SAM OR ANYONE CLOSE TO HER

HE WILL AND MARK MY WORDS TY HE WILL  
PAY AND I WILL HUNT HIM DOWN,KILL HIM  
INFRONT OF YOUR FACE I DON'T CARE  
WHETHER HE IS YOUR BLOOD OR NOT IF HE  
MESS WITH WHAT IS MINE HE WILL KNOW ME  
THEY DON'T CALL ME VILAKAZI FOR  
NOTHING...IF HE THINKS HE HAS THE BK AS  
HIS GROUP HAHHAHAHA

Ty:You are telling the wrong Twin and I am with  
you VILAKAZI

Ben:MY DAY ONE

Ty:MY RIDE AND DIE

Together:WE WILL RIDE TOGETHER TILL WE  
DIE,BROTHERS FOR LIFE JOINED BY LOVE.

They hugged each other

Ty:LET'S SHOW THAT PIECE OF CRAP HOW WE  
DO IT IN SOUTH AFRICA

Ben:I think we should pay him a visit

Ty:(smiling)I like the sound of that we need to

get hold of John

Ben:He probably knows

Ty:So we calling it quits with the girls

Ben:Yeah it's for their safety Ty

Ty:I am getting her back after this whole thing maybe we can call in a truce with Toby we give him back his diamonds it not like we need the money

Ben:Phela own coal and gold mines...His diamonds are like 10 cent they have no value

Ty:This is going to be harder than I thought

Ben:You can say that again,good luck Bro

Ty:Same to you

[07/04, 17:13] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE

.

.

SAM

.

.

Gogo:It will pass Sam

Me:Oh Gogo I thought you went to work already

Gogo:What's wrong baby

Me:(wiping away tears)It's nothing Gogo I need to get the house ready remember the kids are coming over

Gogo:As long as the fathers play far away from both you and Ndoni than all is well with me...can't wait to meet them

Me:(laughing)That's the plan you are going to love them they are just adorable,oooh let me make you some breakfast then

Gogo:Sam forget about breakfast

let's talk

Me:You know what they say breakfast is the most important meal of the day



Gogo:Sam

Me:Gogo

Gogo:Talk to me what's wrong

Me:(shaking head)No no no I can't Gogo not now

Gogo:This is not normal Samthandile you need to cry baby

Sam:(crying)Why does it hurt so much I thought not speaking with him will make things better but still I want to see him,I want to be around him..I ...I

Gogo:Ssssssh ssssssh it will get better soon my love

Me:When I am so tired of crying Gogo

Gogo:It's okay baby just let it all out

I believe there is someone out there waiting for you and he is going to love you just the way you are

Me:I don't think my heart can handle another heart break,first it was dad,aunt and now this I don't think I can handle it anymore

Gogo:You wouldn't be here if you could not handle it Sam there is a reason why you are still here I know baby it may not seem like that but don't allow the people or the bad things of this world to take away your purpose of living,there are times and they are still going to be times when you don't understand but hear this God is with you.You need to let go of all the hurt and allow God to touch you,forgive what Ben did to you and also forgive your aunt baby that's when you will feel light remember the bible teachers us about forgiveness if we look at the book of Ephesians 4:32

"Be kind to one another,tender-hearted,forgiving one another,as God in Christ forgave you"

Forgiveness does not have to come from the people who did you wrong cause at times they

will never know whether they have hurt you or not which is why baby you need to forgive them for yourself for it says in Matthew 5:8

"Blessed are the peacemakers for they shall be called sons of God"

Before you become a peace maker for other people's problems you also have to be a peace maker when it comes to yours, forgiveness comes from For-give which means you are being a bigger person to that one who has hurt you

.

.

Look baby we will I talk this when I get back, stop crying my baby it will get better and remember it all starts with PRAYER and also acknowledging your wrongs before God to for it says

1 John 1:9

"If we confess our sins,He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness"

Me:(crying)Thank you ma

.

.

Gogo:Heeeeh Bab'Dlamini does not like to get late let me get going

Me:(laughing)You guys are getting stronger by the day eeeeh you should give us tips Gogo on how to keep the love burning

Gogo:You will hear those tips when you are 40

Me:Yooooooooooh so you are trying to tell me that you want me to date when I am forty

Gogo:By the time you reach forty I will be long dead...so lovie I am taking my tips to the grave

Sam:Let's not talk about death Gogo

Gogo:(smiling)I am still going to be around Sam

now come and give me my morning kiss

Sam:You treating us like kids Gogo

Gogo:You are kids woza phuza ma(come kiss your mother)

Me:(laughing)I love you

Gogo:(smiling)And I love you too baby kiss your lazy sister for me

Me:Have a blessed day

Gogo:Good luck with the kids

Me:Thanks ma

.

.

She than walked out leaving me closing the door,who would have thought after everything I went through but still God pulled out for me.He not only blessed me with a lovely home but mostly He blessed with a loving mother and sister whom I love dearly.Indeed God is faithful

.

.

Me:I humble myself before you Lord and I would like you to forgive me from all my wrong doings cleanse me with the Blood of the Lamb and purify my heart,Father I carry so much hurt inside of me and I can not do it on my own I need your help Lord

Thank you Lord for everything that you have done for me,I thank you that all things are working for my good it may not seem like that but I know you are working.I just want to say thank you for being a faithful God who never leaves His children.

I thank you for Gogo and Ndoni and I pray that you shall keep them Lord bless them in each and every area lacking in their lives,I also would like to pray for my aunt and cousins even though they did not treat me fairly I forgive them Lord as you have done with me,let love

and unity overflow in that house hold once again, I pray that you shall cover and protect them in your wonderful wings and lastly I would like to pray for Benjamin Vilakazi to be honest God he has hurted me I thought what we had was real and true but that was not the case I forgive him Lord,I pray that you protect him and in everything he does bless him God.I pray that your will in his life shall be done as it is in heaven not forgetting his children Thando and Mila I cover them with the blood of Jesus together with the twins Ella and Travis,Stacy, Que and their parents and be with Gladys Lord.

I pray in the name of Jesus

Amen

Ndoni:Amen

.

.

**BENJAMIN**

.

.

Thando:Daddy are we there yet?

Travis:Can't wait to see Aunt Ndoni and Sam

Ella:When are you coming to fetch us daddy?

Ty:The day after tomorrow

Me:You guys promise that you are going to behave

Thando:Yes daddy

Ty:Still can't believe they agreed to this

Me:Me too after what happened last night I don't think I will be able to face Sam

We pulled over the drive way

Thando:Are we here daddy

Ella:Open up the door

Me:We still need to do some shopping

Ty:Ummmmh maybe you should go with Sam I



will wait here with...umh Ndoni we need to talk

Ella:If daddy is not going than I am not going too

Travis:If boo boo stays I stay

Me:(laughing)These kids are loyal to each other what about you Thando

Thando:Mmmmh is aunt Sam going

Me:Yes baby

Thando:I want to come with you daddy

Me:That's decided than Ty you know what to do

Ella:Bring us some goodies Uncle Ben

Me:I will baby call Aunt Sam for me

Thando:No I will do that

They all got out of the car Ty was really nervous I have never seen him like this before

.

.

After few minutes of waiting in the car with sleeping Mila, Sam walked out looking simple yet beautiful in a Jean, t-shirt and black all star. Thando was busy talking to her as if they haven't seen each other even though it's only been a day but still it felt like a life time without her presence

They opened the back seat door

Thando entered followed by Sam

Me: Aren't you not going to sit with me in front?

Sam: No I am good back here with the kids.....baby Mila ooooh

Thando: You will take him when we get off right now I want to be in your arms

Sam: (smiling) You have me then sweetie

Me: Does your grandmother know that the kids will be spending a day or two with you guys

Her smile faded when she spoke to me

Sam:Yes

Me:Ummmmh okay what did she say about it

Sam:Nothing

Thando:Daddy can we go to spur after shopping

Me:We will buy spur but eat it at home

Thando:Okay daddy,Aunt Sam I like your hair

Sam:(laughing)And I like yours baby

Me:Where are we starting our shopping

Sam:Any where you want Mr Vilakazi

Yooooooooooh this is going to be harder than I thought

Me:Sam look I am...

Cutting me short

Sam:Move on Ben and I will do the same we are here only because I am helping you with the kids like you said what happened between us meant nothing to you well just like me it meant

nothing it was fun while it lasted but now back to reality we are just back to being employer and employee...let's not fight in front of the kid's....stay in your lane and I will stay in mine if you can't do so I suggest you take your kids and leave me alone get that got that sure...now stop stealing glances of me and concentrate on the road we are still young to die

With that said she carried on talking to Thando

[07/04, 17:14] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX(CROP -TOP)

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Ella:Aunt Ndoni where are we going to sleep

Ndoni:In my room my love I hope you don't mind sharing

Travis:As long as you are here together with Aunt Sam than we good

Ndoni:Where are they,they suppose to be here now I am so bored

Ella:We can take a walk right daddy

Ndoni:Maybe when Sam and Thando arrive,do you guys want to go to the park?

Ella:Yes yes yes yes please can we go

Travis:Are there slides and swings

Ndoni:(smiling)Yes love we are going to have a picnic

Ella:Daddy are you going to join us

Me:Ummmmh maybe when I get back Ella

Travis:You only going to stay for a few minutes and I also want to show you my new move on a

swing

Ella:Please daddy bear

Me:(laughing)Okay okay we will join you that's if Aunt Ndoni does not mind

Ndoni:Whatever you say Mr Gibson

Ella:Can we play outside

Ndoni:It's much more safer for you to play at the back,now come just don't ruin Gogo's flowers

Ella:Yeeeeey we promise

we won't, Berrie bring your toys we going to have a tea party

Travis:But I don't want tea it's too hot for that boo boo

Ndoni:First thing first let's apply some sun screen and I will make you some lemonade

Twins:Yeeeeeey

.

.

The twins were now playing outside,Ndoni was sitting in the couch focusing on the TV,she hasn't said a word to me since I got here

Ty:Ndoni

Ndoni:(slient)

I took the TV remote and switched off the TV

Ndoni:Andiyazi ke le uyenzayo(I really don't know what you doing)

Me:Can we talk

Ndoni:Yazi Mr Gibson today is one of those days where I am not in my best moods

Ty:Ndoni just hear me out please

Ndoni:(singing)

You wasting my time

You wasting my time

You wasting my time

Me:Are you going to pretend as if I am not here

Ndoni:I think I need to take a  
nap,(shouting)twins call me if you need  
anything

Ella:Okay

Ndoni:And don't leave the backyard and don't  
play with water(shouting)

Twins:Okay

She left me and went to her room leaving me  
behind

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

As much as I liked having him around it's just  
better to pretend as if he is not there,I was  
laying in my bed when Tyrese walked in



He doesn't give up where is Sam I really want to give him a piece of my mind but today I am going to try and tame my tongue

Ty:Ndoni can we please talk you can't avoid me forever

Me:What is it that you want to talk about

Ty>About us Ndoni

Me:There's no us unless you are mistaking me for someone else

Ty:Look Ndoni I am sorry about what I said last night

Me:Oh no need to apologise Mr Gibson after all I am a child now can you kindly close the door on your way out

and leave the CHILD AND HER CHILDISH ACTS ALONE

Ty:Ndoni don't be like that

Me:What do you want from me Tyrese,didn't

you make your self clear that you want nothing to do with me like really what do you want from me...look I don't want to be rude or anything just stay away from me...I want nothing to do with you..what me and you had is OVER nxa silly part is that it didn't even start

Ty:Ndoni I am sorry okay...I wish there was a better way to tell you this but..

Me:Tell me something I don't know...should I celebrate want me to throw a party oh please Tyrese go and look for someone your age after all you ngutamkhulu kum(you my grandfather) and let me start looking for guys my age

[07/04, 17:14] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

We have just arrived at the mall and we were heading to Woolies to buy some clothes,diapers and all the necessary for the kids

Me:So is there anything you would like to take Sam?

Sam:No I'm good

Me:You can at least take something for Gogo and Ndoni

Sam:If you think buying me and my family some goodies will make me change what's going on between us than you have something going on in your head,Thando don't forget to take some for your cousins

Thando:Okay Aunt Sam ummmh daddy can we take something for Mila he also need a teddy

Sam:What is Mila favourite animal?

Thando:Mmmmh daddy

Me:He will go for a lion

Thando:Yeeeeh

Sam:We should go to the till

.

.

We walked to the till with Sam carrying Mila,we are standing in line when an old couple join us

Old lady:You guys look good together

Me:(smiling)Thank you ma'am

Old lady:I'm Jane and this is my husband Peter

Me:Nice to meet you,I'm Benjamin and this is my son Mila,daughter Thando and my lovely wife Sam

Jane:(smiling)You look so perfect together,how

long have you been together

Sam:He will do the talking

Peter:I see your wife is not much a talker unlike my bubbly wife

Me:She is not bad

Jane:So tell me how long have you been together and how old is this cute little fella can I hold him

Me:It's been six years and it still feels like yesterday when I saw her for the first time,she was serving me and my rude friend at a BnB called Safe Zone and till then she is still and will always be my first and my last,the mother of my kids....I love you Samthandie now and forever more.

Jane:Ncooooooh honey they just like us back in the day

Me:And this little guy is 6 months turning 7 in three weeks

Thando:Are we throwing a party,we can bake cupcakes and cookies just like we did right Aunt..

Me:Yes yes baby we need to get going now

Peter:Before you go here's some advice you probably don't need this but maybe in future you will,it saddens my heart when a see young couples like you guys divorcing all because you have fallen out of love,you need to understand that there are times when you are going to fall out of love with your wife same applies to you Sam but what matters is this you need to make ways to keep your marriage and love exciting.

Now how can you do this by spending more quality time away from family and the kids,secondly your relationship is not for three or more people but it's between you and your wife together with God,never disrespect your wife in front of your family or friends in fact treat her with respect and lastly make Jesus the

foundation of your marriage, anything that is not built on the rock Jesus it will fall down but when it's built on a rock the Jesus your marriage will withstand any kind of a storms and the most important lesson is this

Them: A couple that prays together stays together

Sam: (crying) Wow

Jane: Marriage is not an easy job child many walk away but never leave your husband, when things get tough go on your knees and seek God for guidance and He that joined this union shall protect it

Peter: Honesty and trust in a relationship are very important never forget that

Jane: We need to get going now thank you for giving us your time

Sam: No thank you for such wise words we will differently apply them

Jane:And dear I know you might not want to hear this but this young man really loves you and all things will be revealed just be patient love all is going to work out in the end

Peter:And you Ben sort out your mess before you lose her forever she won't be waiting for long

Sam:How did you know

Jane:We have been there love

Thando:Daddy it's our turn now let's get going I miss Ella and Travis

Sam:Let's take our staff thank you so much

Jane:Next time when we see you both we hope that everything will have worked out and maybe you can invite us for a braai

Me:Thank you let's get going fam

This old couple is too weird how did they know that I need to sort out some stuff wow story of another day



.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Ndoni has been in her room for the past 30 mins and I decided to give her some space, I really don't want to leave without sorting our issue out, the twins were now sitting next to me Travis was playing with his cars and Ella was playing my hair she calls herself Ella the hairdresser

Ella:Daddy

Me:Yes

Ella:Why does berries cut his hair

Me:Cause he is a boy and boys cut their hair

Ella:But berries look good when he has his hair

Me:He won't cut his hair than

Travis:But I will look like a girl

Me:Than we are both not going to cut our hair  
we are going to look like Ella

Ella:I miss aunt Ndoni where is she

Me:In her room

Ella:I want to play with her hair,berries can you  
call Aunt Ndoni

Travis:Okay

Me:(laughing)You such a bully Ella

Ella:He is my berries

Just than Ndoni walked out with Travis on her  
back

Me:You such a baby

Ndoni:He is my baby right Travis

Travis:Yes

Ella:Aunt Ndoni come sit next to daddy

Ndoni:I will use the other couch love

Ella:No I want you to sit next to him

Me:You sit here I will use the other chair

Ella:No I want to sit here

Ndoni:Okay missy bossy whatever you say

Ella:Put your head on daddy's lap

Ndoni:Not happening,did you put her up to this

Me:No

Ndoni:Still don't believe you

Me:She is my daughter after all like father like daughter(smiling)

Ndoni:I feel like burning that face of yours

Me:(laughing)You wouldn't dare

Ndoni:(laughing)Dare me

Me:I dare you

Ndoni:Are you sure cause I don't mind boiling water

Me:Just come and lay on my lap,come to papa

nana

Ella:Aunt Ndoni come to papa nana

Ndoni:I am only doing this because she asked  
don't get it twisted

Ella:Berries come sit next to me

Travis walked towards the kitchen and he took  
a seat next to his sister

Ella:We are going to sing okay

Now sing after me berries you know the song

One to being in

Twins:I love you

You love me

We are a happy family

The twins were enjoying themselves

Travis:Kissy time

He kissed his sister on her cheek

Travis:Kiss Aunt Ndoni daddy

Me:No I can't do that go get us some water

Ella:Aunt Ndoni let daddy play with your hair

Me:Come Ndoni

Ndoni:I can't say no to a head massage

[07/04, 17:15] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-  
SEVEN(CROP TOP)

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Ella:Dad why don't you kiss Aunt Ndoni

Me:What is with you and kisses

Ndoni:And what is it with you running away  
from kisses,is it that you can't kiss Mr Gibson  
maybe you should allow me to teach you since  
you are not "gifted" in the kissing department

Me:You know Ndoni I don't mind kissing you right now just that I respect your grandmothers house

Ndoni:Excuses excuses I'm starting to think you have a problem

Me:I don't have a problem

Ndoni:Then show me

Since she is laying on top off my lap,I went down and I started doing my thing.

Her cold lips against my warm lips you know what they say when cold meets fire and explosion happens

I even forgot that we had kids in the room..It felt so right and I even got the confirmation that there is a possibility that Miss Ndoni here has feelings for me even though she is fighting the attraction eventually she will give in but all after I finsh sorting this Toby issue.

After kissing she kept quiet

Travis:Aunt Ndoni your cheeks are turning red

Ndoni:Pecks of being white aaaaah you always like paying attention to my cheeks Travis

Me:(smiling)I see you have no comment Miss Bubbler Mouth

Ndoni:Oh so that's my new name

Ndoni:You not bad though

Me:Out of a ten

Ndoni:Mmmmh maybe a 3 wil do

Me:(laughing)You lying you just trying to spite me others wise I can tell you still want more....seems like "Tamkhulu Ty" has done his thing

Ndoni:Mxm if you are going to brag about that maybe you should leave me in peace

Me:So tell me since I gave you want you wanted what are you going to offer me

Ndoni:I don't remember asking you to kiss me

Me:I will let this one go but remember you owe me Ndoni

Ndoni:Whatever Tyrese,when are you leaving

Me:Don't pretend as if you don't want me around I know you are going to miss me

Ndoni:In your dreams maybe can't wait for you to leave already you being here is suffocating me...umh Tyrese what would have happened if we gave us a try

Me:Kids time for your nap

Ndoni:See why we won't work you always have a way of dismissing me as if I am a kid oh wait I am a kid...you no what you are a good kisser I must give you that but right now I feel so stupid that I am feeling like aaaaaah I need to take a walk

With that said she left without waiting for me to reply

Ella:You always make Aunt Ndoni mad



Travis:You are bad daddy very bad

Me:She is not mad...why am I having this conversation with you too,come nap time

Ella:Is Aunt Ndoni going to come back remember she promised that we are going to the park

Me:Yes baby now come and take your nap

Travis:Naps are for babies like Mila

Me:You still my babies and I want you guys to have your naps so that you become strong and clever just like me

Ella:No,like mommy speaking of which where is mommy I miss her

Me:She is visiting a family friend

Travis:Is she going to come back here

Ella:She never has time for us now

Me:But I am here baby

Ella:Still you leaving dad as always you

promised that we were going to have a good time like a family

Me:Ella daddy needs to work

Travis:Why are you and mommy not married

Me:Because we do not love each other

Ella:So people who get married are people who love each other right

Travis:I love boo boo that means I can marry her right daddy

Me:Siblings don't get married to each other it's taboo

Ella:But you said that people who love each other get married and what does taboo mean?

Me:I know what I said...

your brains are too big for you two so wished you stayed babies

Ella:I love you daddy and I love you too berries

Me:(smiling)I love you too pumpkin now give

daddy a kiss

Travis:Love you too don't forget to wake us up

Me:I will now get some sleep

Ella:Don't close the door please

Me:Okay sweet heart

Now the question is,where is Ndoni

.

.

SAM

.

.

We both haven't said a word to each other ever since the old couple gave us those wise words,I wonder what did they mean when they said that Ben needs to sort out his issues let me not bother myself cause it has nothing to do with me.The kids were both fast asleep and we managed to buy everything that we are going to

need

Ben:When I get back I would like to try again

Me:I see no point in giving us a try after all you managed to hurt me once so I see no point in going back with you let's stick to being strangers like we were before

Ben:You don't mean that Sam,we belong together and I will do anything in my power to get us back together

Me:Good luck maybe by then I will be long gone

Ben:I will find you where ever you go I will be there you are mine Sam in the very same way I am yours

.

.

NOT EDITED

[07/04, 17:16] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHT

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Kay:You need to go back home Ndoni go and face him,the poor guy is probably worried sick about you

Me:He will be alright I just need some time away from him you know I need to gather my thoughts about what just happened like why did I allow him to kiss me...This whole kiss seems to complicate things

Kay:That's because you are over thinking the whole thing or it's possible you are in love with him

Me:No I'm not

Kay:Why are you being in denial

Me:You suppose to be my stress reliever but

right now you adding to my stress hayi man  
nawe

Me:And I just got here why are you sending me  
away,it hasn't been an hour

Kay:You can't always run away from your  
feelings like there is nothing wrong with what  
you did back there but I think you should take a  
step back since the guy seems not to be  
interested and he is always dismissing the  
matter at hand,at the end of the day you have  
made your feelings made known to him it's up  
to him whether he wants to be in a relationship  
with you or not and Ndoni don't force the guy

Me:Why do you make it sound like I am all  
desperate

Me:I feel so dumb right now I really don't know  
what's wrong with me Kay, whenever he's  
around I feel safe like I can be my crazy self but  
then again I just lose it,you do know that I don't  
like losing it,he makes me say stupid things

which I don't mean to say you get my point right

Kay:(laughing)Right now you not even making any sense let's just go home Ndoni

Me:At least walk me home

Kay:Of cause let's get going boo my mother is going to call me any minute now

Me:Is this normal Kay...like the way I am feeling right now,when is it going to stop I want to go back to being crazy Ndoni like I don't want to come across as one of those girls who throw at themselves at guys especially someone like him maybe I should...

Kay:Ndoni you are over reacting right now there is nothing wrong with you don't ever try to be someone you not,secondly let him take the lead

Me:He is too slow to take the lead,do you know last night he I asked him to kiss me after he said he wanted to Lick some ice cream I had on my face like seriously how disgusting is that

Kay:(laughing)Ooooh so licking is disgusting  
what about the french kissing you had earlier on

Me:(confused)What the heck is that

Kay:Don't tell me you don't know what french  
kissing is

Me:Duuuuh I wouldn't ask if I knew

Kay:What kind of a kiss did you guys have kanti

Me:The mcawww kinda kiss

Kay:Baby kiss,and you call that  
kissing(laughing)Yhooooo hayi shame you both  
out dated mos

Me:You are enjoying this ne so tell me what  
french kissing is

Kay:Exchange of saliva

Me:Sies man naaaa not doing it I'm sticking to  
the mcwaaaaa baba

Kay:Let me get going man

Me:You promised to take me home as in by the



gate

Kay:Hayi Ndoni you only one block away from home and thank you for coming over I really miss having you around man

Me:Hayi alku ever since you had those loud friends of yours you saw me not fit to be in your league so I decided that it was best for me to walk away before I got hurted you know and you also no longer in my class so you made new friends and I get that

Kay:But I never said that Ndoni

Me:Actions speak louder than words Khanyisa you didn't need to say it cause you always had excuses when ever I came to your house so what's the point of putting myself in a place where I am not needed,you really hurted me when you didn't call or send me a text.You are my childhood friend and I get that we are going to meet new people along the way but that does not mean neglect the one friend who has been

with you through thick and thin always  
remember your day, to me Kay you will always  
be my day one

Kay: Babe I'm so sorry that my attitude towards  
you has change and I promise I will make time  
for as you always made time for me no matter  
how busy you were and thank you for coming to  
see me it means a lot, you know I would like to  
stay and have a chat but you know how mom  
can be

Me: Yeah thanks for sparing me your time

Kay: Remember be you

Me: I promise

Kay: Can we hug it out for good time sake

Me: (smiling) Sure

Kay: I love you Ndoni even though I do not say it  
or show it like I used too but that does not  
mean a day does not pass by without me  
thinking about you and again I am sorry for

being such a bad friend,next time tell me

Me:And I love you too Kay now let me get going,kiss Mom for me and tell her I will see her soon

Kay:Will do so Babe

With that being said we walked our separate ways.

.

.

Khanyisa has always been my childhood friend since pre school,we went to the same primary school and high school until her mother took her to one of those model C schools in town.Ever since then she changed she spent less time with me and more time with her other friends,I get the fact that we no longer go to the same school but why she stopped hanging out with me I don't know,I still ask myself what I did to her she even went as far as ignoring my calls

and text.

I don't want to lie I was really hurt,I thought our friendship meant something to her but clearly I was the only one who actually cared about what we had

One thing Gogo told me was this,never hang around with people or place where you are not needed,it's better to walk away than to get hurt.So I decided to walk away from our friendship not because I was jealous or anything but because at that time I was the only one who kept the relationship going.So meeting with her today just brought back memories,she knows me when I am mad,sad or happy just like I know her.

Talking to her made me feel so light at least now I know I am not the only one who goes through what I am going through at this moment.I am grateful to God that He has given me a sister like Sam now I won't go around

chasing people if someone wants to be in my life than they need to play their part if not than it's better for you to leave cause you are occupying some space which belongs to someone else...and as for Kay she is still on a trial whether I am taking her back or not,don't give me that look if she was able to walk away from me than means that she is going to do it in future.

.

.

**BENJAMIN**

.

.

Sam:Finally we home

Me:Let me wake the kids so long

Sam:I will call Ndoni and Tyrese to come and helps us with the shopping bags

Sam:Don't wake them up rather take them to the room,it's the second door to the left place them on the bed which is on the right side

Me:Okay

I did as I was told,Ella and Travis were also taking their naps

I walked out of the room after placing Mila next to his sister

I walked back to the kitchen where Sam was unpacking the groceries

Sam:You didn't close the door,I want to hear Mila when he wakes up

Me:No it's open let me go and help Ty

Sam:Alright

.

.

We finished off packing the groceries and now we were chilling in the lounge

Sam:Ty where is Ndoni I haven't seen her since we got here

Ty:She took a walk

Sam:Oh she will be here let me give her a call

Ty:She left her phone behind

Just than Ndoni walked in

Ndoni:Finally you guys are back,I missed you Sam

Sam:(smiling)And I missed you too so where were you it's so unlike you to leave the house

Ndoni:Just needed some air,where are the children?

Sam:Taking their naps let me dish up for us

Ndoni:Ty can I have a word with you outside

Ty:Ummmh yes sure lead the one

Ndoni:Follow me excuse us

They walked out leaving me and Ben

Me:I wonder what's that all about,am I the only one who noticed some vibe between them

Sam:Nope and whatever that is going between them has nothing to do with us

Me:Aren't you curious to hear

Sam:Ben let them be they will tell us,now come and take your food

Me:We should wait for them come let's listen to their conversation

Sam:You want us to spy on them

Me:No we will be getting the front row seat to what is about to happen you do know there is never a dull moment when it comes to Ndoni and Ty

Sam:You don't come around as someone who likes interfering in other people's businesses

Me:When it comes to my brother than it's my business I know he would do the same,come we even have a clear excess to the window and



thank God you didn't close it

Sam:(laughing)Okay as long as we don't get caught

Me:Rule number one,don't pretend like you were not listening it just sells you out

Sam:(laughing)Okay

She walked to where I was standing

Sam:This is wrong Ben

Me:Just enjoy the moment Babe,my bet is that Ndoni will be breaking up with him

Sam:He broke up with her last night

Me:We're they even dating to start with

Sam:I don't know all I know is that my sister has feelings for him just that she is still in denial and what he said last night made things even worse

Me:What did he do?

Sam:He called her childish,he was rude and he

shouldn't have done that

Me:I know Ty and for one he really loves your sister just that he can't express it,are these curtains see through

Sam:No don't worry I'm sure they don't even know we standing here,they will think we are washing dishes or using the sink

Me:Let me get the hand cloth,so of I win the bet go on a date with me

Sam:Not happening Ben

Me:You really don't want to get back with me

Sam:Ben we can never get back together

Me:Mmmmmh keep on saying that for all I know we never broke up

Sam:Shhhhh

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ty:Where were you I was sick and worried about you

Me:(rolling eyes)Stop being dramatic Tyrese,I just went to see a friend

Ty:But still you can't leave like that

Me:Look Tyrese the reason why I called you here is because I want to know where exactly do I stand with you

Ty:What do you mean

Me:Come on Tyrese the question does not need any further explanation

Ty:We can't be in a relationship right now Ndoni

Me:Why

Ty:There are some stuff that I need to sort out before we get back together

Me:Can't you solve those stuff well in a

relationship with me

Ty:No...Yes eish Ndoni right now is not the right time for me to be in a relationship I'm sorry

Me:Okay fare enough

Ty:But as soon as I get this all sorted we can give us a try

Me:I'm afraid that won't be possible

Tyrese...This what ever it is won't work out for me cause one you not being honest with me and two you want me to wait for you for how long,I am young and I think I should explore so the kiss it was good and all but this is not for me....

[07/04, 17:19] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-NINE

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Me:You don't mean that Ndoni all I am saying is that just wait for me

Ndoni:And I am asking for how long Ty

Me:Just give me three weeks and if I am not back by that time you can move on

Ndoni:Fair

Me:Let's get inside and stop with this nonsense

Ndoni:You just don't get Ty you really don't,you know what to hell with the days,let me go and take a nap

With that being said she walked away,I know what she is asking of me but still I can't give her what she wants all because we still need to take care of Toby.

Ben and Sam were washing dishes when I entered the back door

Ben:What was that all about

Me:Nothing,look when are we leaving

Ben:See what I mean Sam,after eating and when the kids wake up

Me:Mmh okay let me have my food than is everything ready

Ben:We will have this conversation right now is not the right place

Me:EVERYTHING IS JUST FALLING APART ALL BECAUSE OF TOBBY AND HIS STUPID DIAMOMDS,AND YOU KNOW WHAT SCARES ME THE MOST IS THAT I AM LOSING NDONI AND THIS TIME I AM NOT SÜRE WHETHER SHE IS GOING TO ALLOW ME BACK IN

Ben:Calm down everything is going to be okay

Me:DON'T TELL ME TO CALM DOWN YOU KNOW THIS THING MAY TAKE A FEW WEEKS,TURNING INTO MONTH'S AND LATER BEING YEARS,THIS IS ALL MESSED UP

As Ben I was about to reply Sam walked in,she

was carrying Mila who was all smiles and the the kids were right behind her

Ella:Uncle Ben what did you get us

Ben:Oh man we forgot maybe next time

Ella:Oh okay

Sam:He is only playing with you sweetie I hope you both like the clothes and the toys we brought for you

Me:Thanks man

Ben:Nah it's nothing I know you would have done the same thing

Travis:Let's go to the park

Sam:What park

Ndoni:I promised them that when you guys come back that we are all going to the park

Ben:Is it safe for the kids

Ndoni:We wouldn't be going if it wasn't safe Ben

Me:I don't think it's a good idea

Sam:The kids need to go out and have some fun in the sun

Thando:(shouting)We want to go,we want to go

The twins joined in

Me:Okay okay okay we can go you not going to spend the whole day there

.

.

They all went to the park and later on returned since Ben and Ty needed to go.

The kids were crying for their father's excluding Travis and Mila who was fast asleep on Sam back,it was time for them to go and Gogo was about to arrive any minute from now

Ben who was holding a crying Thando was busy soothing nothing but sweet words to her

Ben:Baby I promise daddy is going to come



back

princess

Thando:(crying)I don't want you to go

Ben:I know but I need to take care of this

Thando:Promise you going to call

Ben:I promise

Ella:You such a cry baby Thando

Ndoni:Says the lady who was crying a few minutes ago,you also a baby Ella

Sam:Not so long ago you also were crying just because you don't want your dad to go,it's only Travis and Mila

Ella:That's because Mila does not even know what's going on

Sam:(laughing)One would swear she is your daughter Ndoni

Ndoni:I'm not that bad though

Sam:We need to watch what we say around them

Ndoni:Especially Thando and Ella

Sam:Travis is such a berry

Ndoni:Hope he grows up and be the way he is now a gentleman he is

Sam:And that he meets the right girl who won't break his beautiful heart

Ndoni:With Ella around I doubt she will allow any girls around her berries you know how territorial she is when it comes to her twin and Thando

Sam:They are just so cute I pray that regardless of what might happen that they will always stand for each other,I also wish to see them grow

Ben:(smiling)Don't worry about that you are going to see,ladies it's time for us to go now

Sam:Call when you have arrived safely

Ben:See why you and me belong together

Sam:Here you go again

Ben:I can't leave without hugging my family

Thando:Group hug

They all joined with the kids inside the circle hugging their legs instead all because they are short.

.

.

After breaking the group hug the guys individually hugged the kids and last but not least the most important women in their lives,the women who the keys to their hearts if only they knew that their hearts belonged to them.

Tyrese hugged Ndoni who was hesitating at first but later gave in.He was enjoying this moment for it's possible that he might not have her in his arms once he returns,what worried

him the most was the fact that the women he loves will soon move on..but he will come back for her no matter what even if the age is the problem he is going to fight for what he has with Ndoni.

And lastly Ben and Sam anyone can see the love that they have for each other,to the way they hold each other and to the way their eyes do the talking when they are unable to speak any words.

Ben was looking into her eyes for that is where he got his answers,when he looked into her eyes he saw pain and worry

Ben:Don't worry I am going to come back

Sam:Who said I was worried

Ben:(laughing)Your eyes are selling you out

Sam

Sam:Just come back for the kids Ben

Ben:And you,I love you Samthandie

He wanted to kiss her but he decided not to for it will only complicate things,as they were busy staring at each others eyes Mila disturbed the moment when he started crying

Sam:Oh baby

Thando:He's jealous that's all

Ella:He likes attention

Travis:And he is making noise,make him stop  
Aunt Sam

Sam:Stop making fun of my baby

Thando:He is going to be a mommies baby

Ella:Yeeeeeeeeewwwwu

Ndoni:Haibo Ella you such a drama queen you making it seem as if it's a bad thing

Thando:It is Aunt Ndoni at school they are boys who cry for their mommies  
whenever they get dropped off

Sam:Just like you both cry for your daddies

there is nothing wrong with that

Thando:It's normal for a girl to cry

Travis:Boys are also allowed to cry too

Ella:No they can't

Travis:Yes they can

Ella:No they can't

Travis:Yes they can

Ty:Let me get going

Ella:One last kiss daddy,Thando and berries  
let's give daddy a big fat hug

Ben:What about me

Thando:You too dad come over

Ben:I am so going to miss you guys

.

.

After the hug the guys left as much as the girls  
didn't want them around it felt like they were

leaving for good

Sam:They are going to come back right?

Ndoni:Yes they will now come let's pray for their safety

Ndoni:Heavenly Father we just come before you Lord and we would like to say thank you for every good thing you have done in our lives,we would like you Oh Lord to protect Tyrese and Benjamin together with the people they will be going with.Be with them and keep the safe from all evil.

In Jesus name,Amen.

Sam:Amen

.

.

Travis:So when is granny arriving

Ella:Yah we have been waiting for like forever

Thando:You said she is coming since six

o'clock now the time is what's the time Aunt Sam

Sam:Half past six baby

Ndoni:(laughing)The way you guys are out spoken one would think you 13 years olds...and you don't even know the time,kids still have a long way to go

Just than Bab'Dlamini pulled over

Ella:Is that granny?

Thando:Can we go hug her

Ndoni:Of cause you can

They all ran out shouting and screaming granny

Gogo was taken back to memory lane when Ndoni was still the same age as them

They hugged her her legs

Gogo:(smiling)What a warm welcome

Travis:Let me carry your bag granny



Gogo:Thank you baby,now come on let's get inside

[07/04, 17:19] W: CHAPTER THIRTY

.

.

Tobby was busy having a drink with some of his business associations when Tyrese,Benjamin and John walked in looking all cool and dressed up in three piece suits,they all looked like classic men

Tobby:SECURITY SECURITY

Benjamin:Hahahaha they won't hear you now you(pointing at the guys)get moving we have some business we would like to have with our so called brother here and we don't want to be disturbed

John:And if you dare make any calls to your gangs consider your families dead,he said that with a cold look plasticed on his face.

Ben:And I don't mind cutting them one by one while they are still alive,I just love it when they beg for mercy mmmmh the smell of blood it's been a while since a killed(laughing)..The gentleman looked at Ben who was laughing at what he just said.

They all looked at him as if he is crazy

Ty:Many say he is not mental well up stairs,he gets like this when someone messes with his family

Ben:Come on guys cheer up I won't hurt you,but don't ever double cross me he said with his deep voice

Ty:You talking about cutting I won't mind blowing their brains off,I just love the sound that the brain makes when a bullet enters the skull,it leaves the victim with a nasty blow and I love feeding the victims brains to the surviving,how they vomit and cry and some go as far as messing themselves

John:(laughing)Remember when we had Red King gangleader Davon

Guy 1:Y..o..u mee..aa..n t..he DAV000...N of th...ee R...eds was totured by you guys the most feared leader was totured by you guys....you the reason behind his mental break down

Ben:(million dollor smile)That's us in the flash baby

Guy 2:The Dragon Slayer,Night Hawker and thee Vilikazi

Ty:(smiling)I feel honoured right now

Tobby:WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON  
HERE,YOU CAN'T COME INTO MY HOUSE AND  
TAKE CONTROL THIS IS MY TERRIORTY

Guy 3:Do you know who you talking too

Guy 2:He clearly does not know them

Guy 1:We will be leaving gentleman and we certainly don't want to be your enemies we have heard about how you eliminate your enemies

and I for one don't want to feel your wrath

With that being said they all quickly walked out not even daring to look back they all feared for their lives

.

.

Tobby: You all look dressed up for the occasion

Ben is wearing a maroon three slim fit suit which he paired off with a white shirt and brown shoes, his hair was nicely shaved and his beard trimmed.

Tyrese is wearing a navy slim fit suit which he paired off with a baby blue shirt pairing it off with black shoes. He didn't cut his curly hair since he made a promise to Ella and Travis... This coming holiday they will be rocking their afro's.

And John he is wearing a dark green slim fit suit but he decided on leaving his blazer behind, he rocked his suit by wearing a black shirt and

brown shoes.

The guys oozed money and power but mostly ruthlessness and coldness the room was filled with their dark aura,if you know what I mean

Ben:In case you didn't know this is how we dress up in South Africa

this is not America

John:Aren't you going to pour us some whiskey

Ty:For good time sake baby brother

Tobby:Where are my diamonds

Ben:Oh we have your diamonds

Ty:We not here to fight we here to call in a truce

Tobby:Go on I'm listening

John:You lack some hospitality your wife should teach you a think or two about entertaining your guests

Tobby was shocked by that revelation,how did they know he was married he always kept his

personal life private most people know him as a bachelor

John:(laughing)You thought you are the only one who knows how to do some digging on people

Ben:(laughing)You should have seen his face,priceless

Ty:(laughing)He almost peeed on himself

They all started laughing at him making him feel small all over again

They all stopped laughing and turned and gave him one of the coldest looks ever.Tobby never feared any one of the guys but now he was so scared of them.The guys he once knew were no longer the same people he left a few years ago

Ty:So when are we meeting little Raquel

Tobby chocked

John:You thought we didn't know that you have

a wife and a daughter and you have the decency to threaten my wife and kids not forgetting my nephew's and nieces(referring to the twins,Thando and Mila)

Ben:I wonder how your wife will look like when I use one of my axes on her beautiful face

Ty:Or the cry my little niece will make when I use my Aka-47 on her after all she is not family,she is just a random stranger to me

John:So what is it going to be Toby

He said giving him a tablet showing him that their guys are outside his mansion house in Midrand surbubs where his wife and daughter are residing

Ben:Instead of killing them ourselves

Ty:We can give out this information

John:You do know they are people who are after your blood

Tobby:Let's not involve our families in this

Ben:Oh so now you don't want to involve them,you had someone spy on is with our women together with our children you the one who brought in family

Ty:And we just finishing off what you started

Tobby:Let's talk about this

like man there is no need to play dirty

John:Oh so now you want us to talk,should we give him a chance

Ben:Nah I say let's finish him off

Ty:I agree with Ben

They all took out their guys and pointed at Tobby who was now shaking with fear

Tobby:Pleeeeeeeasssssse forgive me

Ty shot him on his leg

Ty:That is for killing our parents and our sister

John shot him on his right foot



John:That's for coming down to South Africa and threatening my family

Ben shot him on his arm

Ben:And that's for putting my wife and kids in danger,that's for ruining things for me and Ty

And once again Ben shot him again

John:And what's that for

Ben:(laughing)To be honest I don't know just like the thought of killing him

Ty:Let's call him a doctor we don't want him dying now do we

John:This will be a reminder to him not to mess with us

Ty:Let's get going we are not welcome here he didn't even give us a drink

Ben:It was nice seeing you old friend

Ty:Baby brother you still have a long way to go

John:Never mess with the big dogs

.

.

With that being said they left,leaving Toby  
crying out in pain

Bobby rushed in and called his doctor

Toby:I SWEAR I AM GOING TO GET THEM FOR  
THIS

Bobby:You need to lie low boss

Toby:I SWEAR I AM GOING TO HURT THEM  
THEY WON'T SEE IT COMING

[07/04, 17:21] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-ONE

.

.

TWO YEAR LATER

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Today is my second anniversary with Sam, yes we managed to work things out she still doesn't know that I am a gangster and that is one part of my life that I don't know how I am going to bring myself into telling her. We have had our ups and downs but still we managed to hold on to each other.

Thando is 8 years old and she is doing grade 3 she is still very talkative nothing has changed about Thando other than turning into a beautiful young girl, and my man Mila is two years old he is also very talkative and yes he is a mommy boy. Him and Sam are very close he is very clinging to his mother yes you heard me right

the kids call Sam mom and she loves them like they are her own speaking of Mpho never heard about since she left South Africa two years ago she hasn't made any connect with them and I really don't bother what Mpho does

.

.

I was in deep thoughts when Thando walked in followed by her brother who was saying something but his sister wasn't listening to him

Mila:Dada up(pick me up)

Me:You only want me when your mother is not around

I picked him up and placed him on the kitchen counter

Thando was rather quiet today

Me:Baby what's wrong

Thando:It's nothing daddy...can I call

mom(Sam)..she was tearing up

Mila:Nando cry

Me:Baby talk to me what's wrong

Thando:I want to talk to mom dad please

Me:Okay okay let's see if she is awake

I dialed Sam's number and she was not answering

Me:She is not answering baby

Thando:Try again

I dialed her number and she answered my call

Sam:Mmmmmh

Oh my love is still sleeping and I know she doesn't like being woken up

Me:Sorry baby but Thando wants to talk to you

Sam:Is everything okay

Me:I don't know she wants to talk with you hold on

I gave Thando the phone and she walked out,haibo so that means I am not suppose to hear what they are talking about

She than came back smiling I wonder what was that all about

Me:Is your mother still on the other side

Thando:Yes she wants to talk with you

Me:Okay...baby

Sam:She was asking if I was her real mother...morning love

Me:WHAT

Sam:Calm down you see why she didn't talk to you cause she knew you were going to shout or act up and that's not what she really needs right now

Me:Where the heck is this all coming from

Sam:Come on Ben you knew she was going to ask eventually now I had a talk with her,she just

want to be sure that I won't leave her just like how Mpho left her and I told her that I would never do that or try to replace her mother

Me:YOU ARE A MUCH BETTER MOTHER THAN MPH0

Sam:Vilakazi you need to calm down or you are going to scare the kids

Me:Okay fine so when are you coming down here you know it's been a well,still don't understand why you had to pick Free State of all places you do know that Wits also does Medicine

Sam:I know love but I love it here and you do know that Gogo would never allow a vat and sit relationship

Me:But Ndoni is doing it

Sam:That's because she got accepted that side and you know Tyrese doesn't take no for an answer

Me:We miss you

Sam:I only have one exam left then I am coming over

Me:Aren't you guys visting Gogo

Sam:Oh weeeh ever since she and Bab'Dlamini got married they have been travelling the world,we will see them when they get back from Kenya

Me:Mmmmmh okay babe did you have your period last time I checked you said you late

Sam:My periods are always late and I am not pregnant Benjamin

Me:I am not saying you are remember condoms are not 100% safe

Sam:I am not pregnant

Me:Okay okay fine whatever you say

Sam:My body would be showing me signs and it's to earlier for us to have a baby we not even



married yet

Me:Then let's get married Sam

Sam:I want to finish studying Ben

Me:So you are telling me that I should wait five more years you telling me that we are going to tie the knot when I am 37 years old

Sam:(laughing)It doesn't sound bad either let me get going I'm hungry

Me:You always hungry

Sam:I'm not pregnant Ben,kiss the kids for me I will see them tomorrow

Me:We love you

Sam:And I love you guys too

Me:Ace that exam Dr.Vilakazi

Sam:That's the plan Vilakazi

Mila walked in and he nudged my trousers

Mila:Mila eat

Me:(laughing)Your son wants to eat

Sam:My baby can't wait to see him

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Ndoni:This can't be happening(crying)

Me:You have been saying that

Ndoni:This is not possible

Me:That what's happen when people don't use protection Ndoni

Ndoni:You happy about this aren't you,you planned this

She was now throwing the pregnancy tests at me

Me:Ndoni stop we are going to get through this

together

Ndoni:You don't get this I am only 20 and now I am pregnant,I haven't even finished my degree the busaries is going to kick me

Me:And I will pay for your school fees

Ndoni:I can't face Gogo not to mention Sam

Me:She will understand now stop crying you are going to stress the baby

Ndoni:I hate you

Me:And I love you,now this explains the tantrums,always eating

Ndoni:Oh so now you are calling me fat

Me:Ndoni I didn't say that

Ndoni:You calling me a pig(crying)I eat like a pig

Me:Baby you know I don't like it when I see you crying

Ndoni:I just can't help it okay

Me: Listen we are going to get through this together

Ndoni: Okay

Me: I love you

Ndoni: Me too

[07/04, 17:22] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-TWO

.

.

SAM

.

.

I was looking forward to seeing my babies that I couldn't even wait for tomorrow so after writing my exam I packed my bags and took the rest of my things to the storage.

.

.

I took my things out paying the cab driver, Ben's car was parked in the drive way, feels so good being home

.

.

There was noise coming from the house I wonder what Ben is doing to my kids Mila was screaming and Thando was shouting one would swear they were fighting

I rang the door bell and Thando shouted coming, I couldn't wait to see her and Mila

When she opened the door her face was priceless, she always does that whenever I come back home it's been three months since I last saw them due to back to back exams and assignments

Thando:(screaming) Mommy you home

She jumped and hugged me, she may not be my biological daughter but I love her and her

brother so much as if they are my own

Me:(laughing)And hello to you too baby

She started crying

Me:Baby what's wrong just than Mila came by running towards me he was even falling what's funny is the fact that he was still screaming mama while falling oh my baby

Thando:(crying)You are the best mom in the world that's why...just a few hours ago you said that you were coming back tomorrow and now here you are this has to be the best gift ever

Me:(crying)And I love you too and I promise I will always be there when you need me

Mila came in and hugged me with a hug and gave me wet kisses

Mila:Mommy miss

Me:And I missed you to bunny

Mila:Mommy love

Me:And I love you too,where is daddy

Thando:He is making some lunch for us

Me:Let's get going I am so hungry I can eat like a lion

.

.

We all went to the kitchen and my handsome husband was busy making lunch he knows his way in the kitchen he often says he prefers not to be disturb while he is cooking

Me:Let's get married as in tomorrow(singing)

Ben:(singing)

As in tomorrow say the word baby and I will send oMalume

Ben:Hang on a sec that voice sounds like Sam's,aaargh maybe I miss her

Thando:Daddy Mommy is here you not dreaming

He than turned and when he saw me,he just rushed over

He hugged me as if he hasn't seen me for what seemed like a life time and I know that three months is no child's play

Me:Seems like someone missed me

He started sniffing which is so unlike Ben...is Ben crying?

Mila:Dada cry

Thando:(laughing)Daddy are you crying

Ben:(crying)You don't know how happy I am to see you

Me:Ncoooh what are we having love I'm starving

Ben:I'm nearly done,Thando go and set the table

Thando:Yes daddy

Ben:Mila go help your sister

Mila:No,mama



Ben:Ooooh so no longer want me and the reason is because your mom is home

Mila:Mama

Me:Let me go and fresh up I will be done in a sec,Mila come have a bath with Mommy

Mila:Yeah

Ben:Uza bayi moffie umntana wam(he is going to be a softie)

Sam:Never come baby let's go

.

.

Thando and her father were both waiting for me and Mila,he is now wearing his shorts and vest

Thando:Can we visit aunt Ndoni

Ben:Maybe tomorrow your mom needs to rest

Thando:But dad I miss them all

Me:We can go and visit them after having lunch

Ben started sniffing the air

Ben:Babe can you smell that

Me:Smell what

Ben:An rotten egg,sies these eggs are rotten

Me:These eggs don't smell rotten

Ben:No I can't take this

Me:You were the one, who was preparing the eggs

Ben stood up and ran to the bathroom

Thando:Is daddy sick

Me:Yes baby eat he might have a stomach bug

Thando:Are these eggs rotten

Me:No baby they fine,eat up I will go and check on your dad

.

.

I went to check on Ben and he was still

vomiting,when I stood behind him he asked me to leave the bathroom

Ben:Babe you need to take a bath you smell

Me:Haibo Ben there is nothing wrong with my fragrance

Ben:Babe your fragrance is making me sick please take a bath

Me:Okay just clean up here and I will be with the kids

Ben:Okay

.

.

I wonder what's wrong with Ben eggs are his favourite and the last time I checked he loved my floral scent

Let me go and finish my breakfast I'm still hungry you know

[07/04, 17:23] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-THREE

·  
·  
TYRESE  
·  
·

Ndoni was sleeping up stairs that is what she has been doing for the past 2 months at first I thought she was tired due to late night of studying.

I have just picked the twins from school and they enjoyed being around Ndoni instead of their mother Millie,yes Millie is still around and for her own sake she has been in her own lane.

Ella and Travis are also calling Ndoni mommy after hearing Thando they are such copy cats and I missed them,I can't believe in just a few months we will have a mini me or mini Ndoni...I hope she looks beautiful as her mother as I was thinking I felt little hands around my waist and I

knew that it was Ndoni

Me:You suppose to be resting

Ndoni:I am pregnant not sick Tyrese

Me:We should go and consult with the a doctor  
the sooner we find you a new gynae the better

Ndoni:And we will you just need to relax

Me:I will only relax once we confirm how far a  
long we are speaking of which,when are we  
planning on getting married I don't want my  
child born out of wedlock,I want her to have my  
last name

Ndoni:It could be a little boy and we do need  
another Travis you know I think one Ella is  
enough for me

Me:You calling my daughter a diva

Ndoni:Our daughter is a diva and I want us to  
have a boy

Me:It's possible that we are expecting twins

Ndoni:No I have a feeling that it's only one mice

Me:Are you calling my daughter a mice

Ndoni:All kids look like mice when they are born so he is going to look like a pink mice

Just as we were busy aguring about the baby's gender the door bell rang

Ndoni:Hope it's not Millie

Me:She is not having the kids

Me:Twins answer the door

Twins:Okay

I was busy kissing my soon to be wife

.

.

Sam:You guys need to get a room

Ndoni lost it when she saw her sister,she even started crying

Sam:What's with everyone and tears today

Ndoni:We miss that's all we have so much to talk about,heehh Mila

He didn't even bother greeting his Aunt and my Ndoni started crying again

Ndoni:(crying)He....he doesn't like me

Me:Babe he just wants to be in his mom arms remember he hasn't since her for three months

Ndoni:(crying)But still I want to hold me

Sam:Okay is everything okay here why is Ndoni such a cry baby

Ndoni:(crying)She is calling me a baby

Sam:Babe I was just joking

Me:This is going to be the longest 9 months of my life

Ben:Am I the only one who is feeling cold,you should turn off the air conditioner

Sam:Babe are you sure you okay

She said as she felt his temperature

Sam:Your temperature seems normal to me

Ben:Maybe there is something I ate,I need to lie down excuse me

Me:And then what's wrong with him,the Ben I know never falls sick

Sam:Ever since I got home he has been acting weird

Ndoni:I want something spicy

Sam:Mmmmmh some dunked wings will do,my mouth is even watery by the thought of these wings,can and maybe a crusher will do

Ndoni:Babe don't you mind going out

Me:You can place an order the delivery guy will drop everything here

Sam:Let's get going

.

.

KOURTNEY



.

.

The whole pregnancy thing came as a shock but what is done is done.

Sam:So what's up with you?

Me:Me nothing why

Sam:You know you can tell me anything

Me:I'm pregnant

Sam:WHAT

Me:I know I don't know what to do

Sam:Gogo is going to be so disappointed but I'm here for you and we can't say no to the little guy

Me:You not going to shout at me

Sam:(laughing)Why would I do that I know you didn't get pregnant on purpose and that mistakes do happen what's important right now is that you decrease your stress levels you

know stress is not healthy for the baby

Me:(laughing)Yes Dr.Vilikazi

Sam:Let's order I don't want you to starve my nephew

Me:Or neice,what's up with you...you have gained some weight

Sam:You know how stressful the exams are so my only escape is food now....mmmmh don't you have some oreos

Me:We do let's go to the pantry

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

I was in the room where Ben was sleeping,my brother was really out its so unlike Ben

Me:Ben wake up

Ben:Just let me sleep Sam

Me:I'm not Sam dude wake up there is a fire

He quickly springed out of the

Ben:Sam the kids

Me:(laughing)Will you relax I wanted you to get up

As I was laughing Ben started crying

Me:(laughing)No man you deserve an Oscar you even have tears to waste hahhahah

As soon as I noticed he wasn't joking I went to where he was sitting

Me:(worried)Benjamin what's wrong

Ben continued to cry

Me:How am I going to help you if you don't talk to me

Ben:(sniffing)I want some eggs but I can't eat

them

Me:Is that the reason why you are crying

Ben:Yes

[07/04, 17:23] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-FOUR

.

.

TOBBY

.

.

Bobby:Boss I think this is a bad idea,why do you want to break a truce you made with them.

Me:You won't understand Bobby South Africa is just to small for four bulls,three must be out and one must stand and the one remaining will be me

Bobby:Tobby you are going to die think how this is going to hurt your wife,do you want Rachel to grow up without her father

Me:I want neither of that and it won't come to that if I strike now

Just than Millicent Ty baby mama walked in

Millie:Good Bob you here I want you to get me some lemon water

Bobby:I don't take orders from you Millicent

Millie:Call me Millie that's how Ty calls me

Bobby:The very same guy who wants nothing to do with you heeeela sisi wake up and smell the coffee the guy is over you he does not love you

Millie:Ty loves me he is just confused by that little child who is playing happy family with my man

Bobby:That same child is the very SAME child who keeps YOUR MANS BED WARM AT NIGHT,maybe you should ask her a thing or two on how she keeps the FIRE burning(laughing)

Millie:Are you done insulting me

Bobby:Oh shame I was telling you the truth

Millie:I am going to pretend as if you are not here,the way you are so annoying you remind me of those little brats that I call children

Bobby:And those little brats are your children,Millicent are you sure you mentally stable...Tobby you can't be working with someone who doesn't even love her own children

Millie:And that is not your decision to make

Bobby:For the last time boss just let this whole revenge go it's not worth the shot

Me:I am going to do this whether you like it or not,in fact I don't really care what you and the other gang leaders think I am going to take Ty,Ben and John down with or without your help

Bobby:In that case I quit at least I tired changing your mind at the end of the day you are a grown man Tobby and you are able to

make your own choices but you need to understand that your own life is not the only one you should be thinking about what about....never mind and as for you I hope Ty and his brothers blow that empty brain of yours

Millie:Tyrese won't hurt me I am the mother of his heir

Bobby:(laughing)I don't know which world you both living in but good luck

Me:We don't need luck very soon you will hear that the mighty musketeers have fallen and it will all be thanks to me

Bobby:Or maybe we will be hearing about your funeral let me start shopping for the best suit

Me:Just leave Bob clearly you don't want to be here and leave everything that belongs to me

Bob:(laughing)You are both going to die a painful death don't say I didn't warn you

Me:My keys now and close the door on your

way out useless piece off

Bobby:Hahahhahah we will be singing Amagugu  
let me get going

Me:If you dare double cross me I swear

Bobby:And ruin the moment nah I will your twin  
do the ruining now if you can excuse I need to  
do some fittings

With that being said he walked out never in my  
entire life have I thought that Bob would walk  
out on me

.

.

Millie:At least I won't be seeing his ugly face  
again

Me:Where is Angie I don't pay you guys for  
nothing

Millie:She had some home emergency,she will  
be here tomorrow now brother in law I have



been thinking

Me:I'm all ears

Millie:Why don't we sell Ndoni she can make a nice play thing to some rich thug,she has the looks and I am sure she is worth millions

Me:You mean as in human trafficking

Millie:In that way you can take away what Ty loves the most and I will have all to myself,think about it it's a win win

Me:Mmmh and the buyer needs to be from outside South Africa so that Ty and his gorillas won't be able to track her down

Millie:(smiling)Now you are talking,you just need to find a buyer the sooner you do the better we have been waiting for 2 years now she needs to go

Me:Patience Millie I don't like loose ends and I don't want all of this to come pointing at me

Millie:Okay fine what about Ben and John,I want

to teach Ben a lesson he has been undermining me

Me:They are the least of my problems I want to break my brother

Millie:Let the games begin than,this calls for a celebration

Me:Let me call Biza as soon as we get a buyer the better maybe we will put this action in motion in 6 months time

Millie:Now we talking,Miss Ndoni should enjoy her last month's with my man cause very soon he is going to be mine

Me:To us

Mille:To us

[07/04, 17:24] W: GOOD NIGHT CHAPTER ♥

.

.

CHAPTER THIRTY-FIVE

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Me:Are you being serious right now

Ben:(crying)Why are you shouting at me

Me:What happened to you Benjamin you were fine perfectly fine last week

Ben:(crying)All I want are some eggs can you get me some boiled eggs that's all I'm asking for...boiled eggs mixed with yoghurt

Me:Sies why are you eating like a pig

That made him cry even more

Ben:(crying)Just call me Sam please

Me:(laughing)I need to tell John about this one would swear you are pregnant

I walked out of the room leaving Mr cry baby alone, Sam and Ndoni were talking in the kitchen and the kids were playing in their playroom, Mila is very clinging to his mother today

Me: Mila come to Dada

Mila: No

Me: Sam you need to go and check Ben

Sam: What's wrong is he vomiting again

Me: He is acting weird, do you know he actually cried when I woke him up and not only that he wants some boiled eggs with yoghurt who eats that

Ndoni: Sounds yummy let me try it

Sam: You not feeding me nephew such junk, let me go and check on Ben

She left us alone and Mila was following his mom

Me: Very soon our mini us will be following you

around, speaking of which have you noticed that Sam has some glow and she even has gained some weight

Ndoni: That's what I told her she even has an appetite which is so not like her, we all know that Sam is not a huge fan of food but do you know she had 8 dunked wings, with two large fries

Me: Last time I checked she doesn't like fries

Ndoni: She has a tape worm Babe I'm telling you

Me: And what did you have my queen

Ndoni: We had 4 wings with Krusher I want some sea food please Babe

Me: Let me get Ben to come with me

Ndoni: That's if he is going to agree

.

.

SAM

.

.

Me:Baby Ty says you were crying

Ben:(crying)I just want some eggs and yoghurt....or cheese and ice cream will do since it's much quicker to prepare

Me:We should go see a doctor baby this is not normal

Ben:(shouting)YOU ARE CALLING ME CRAZY IS THAT WHAT YOU ARE IMPLYING,I SAW THE LOOK YOU JUST GAVE ME A FEW MINUTES AGO I'M NOT SEEING A DOCTOR....YOU ARE A DOCTOR ARE'NT YOU SAM

Mila:Mama mama

Sam:You scaring the baby Ben

Ben:Can you just leave I need some time alone,you are both suffocating me I need to breath

He was fanning himself with his hand

Me:Okay,come Mila let's go baby

As we were walking towards the door Ben started crying again

Ben:(crying)You...couldn't wait to. ..oooo  
leeeave me alone

Me:But you said we should leave

Ben:Both of you come and cuddle with me...please

Me:Okay,Mila come take a nap nana

Mila:Sleep baby

Me:Yes baby needs to sleep

We joined Ben in bed and Mila slept as soon as he was in his father's arms.Ben sudden behaviour was starting to get me worried what if this man is Bipolar than what,is it possible this man whom I claim to love might have a hidden personality which is starting to show

now,that means me and the kids are not safe.My stomach started rumbling again you swear I didn't eat 30 mins ago

Me:Ben I'm hungry

Me:Ben

When I turned to look at him he was fast asleep,Ben does not take naps during the day he usually says it's for sissies I guess he is a sissy today.

I slowly got off the bed not making a sound and went downstairs to the kitchen,where Ndoni and Ty were busy being lovey dovey

Ty:So how is he?

Me:You don't want to know,he wants some cheese and ice cream

Ty:Sies who eats that

Me:Benjamin and he doesn't want to go to the doctor what if he is loosing his mind



Ty:(laughing)You over reacting maybe he is feeling sick or something

Me:Mmmh I'm hungry

Ty and Ndoni gave each other the look

Me:What

Ndoni:Are you sure you don't have a tape worm

Me:Am I not to old for that

Ty:You really aren't a fan of food Sam your sudden change in eating is kind of worrying  
Ndoni says you even had fries...fries are not your favourite anything that has potatoes you don't like it

Me:It's been 3 months since I started eating fries

Ty:Why does it seem like everyone around me is sick

Me:I'm not sick

Ty:Yet we all need a check up

Me:Not having I'm perfectly fine,I also need some new clothes my old ones are not fitting me

Ndoni:Gogo wants us home by next week

Me:Are you going to tell her than

Ndoni:I'm so scared I want to get this over and done with

Me:I am going to hold your way hand all the way Babe

Ndoni:(crying)Thank you

Me:This baby of yours is making you a cry baby can't wait to me the little kitten

Ty:My daughter is not a kitten Sam

Me:Kitten's are cute Ty

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Me:Let me go and wake Ben up

Sam:Can you bring Mila down

Me:Sure no problem let me give John a call

.

.

Me:John I'm telling you something is wrong with Ben you should have seen him

John:(laughing)Next time take a video of him can't wait for you guys to come over for the holidays

Me:Me too listen let me get going kiss the kids for me,Love you all

.

.

After talking with John I made my way back to

Ben room,Mila was up

Mila:Mama

Me:She is downstairs

Mila:Mama mama

Me:let's wake Dada up

[07/05, 10:05] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-SIX

.

.

3 WEEKS LATER

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

We were back home and Gogo will be arriving shortly

Me:Sam I don't think I can do this

Sam:You should tell her sooner than later.

She was stuffing her self with fries Sam eating habits are getting badder each day one would swear she is the one who is pregnant

Me:Sam when last did you have your period

Sam:Not you again for the last time I'm not pregnant I even took a pregnancy test a few months ago and it came out negative

Me:Okay okay just that you eat a lot

and I'm worried that's all

Sam:I don't get why you seem to have a problem with my eating...relax sisi nothing is wrong with me

As we were busy talking Gogo walked in

followed by Bab'Dlamini

Gogo:My babies(crying)

Me:Gogo you also going to make me cry

Sam:Not again

Bab'Dlamini:We missed you guys

Sam:We here now

Gogo:And where are the little bears

Sam:They will be joining us in a few days,let me help you with that

Gogo was looking at Sam more like she was analysing her body

.

.

Gogo:Love can you please give me and the girls some time

Bab'Dlamini:Okay should I bring something

Gogo:Nothing my love I think Ndoni and Sam

did some grocery shopping

Sam:Baba can you please bring me some ice cream and oreos

Bab'Dlamini:(laughing)Ok sweet heart let me get going than,love you all

Me:We love you too

.

.

Bab'Dlamini left us with Gogo her facial expression has now changed to welcoming and loving Gogo to Gogzilla mode,oh my gosh is it possible that she knows I am pregnant,I'm not even showing yet

Sam:Let me go and make you some tea

Gogo:SIT DOWN SAMTHANDIE

Sam:Okay...did I do something wrong

Gogo:UMITHI SAMTHANDIE (are you pregnant)

Sam:(laughing)Of cause not Gogo let me go

and make us some tea...maybe your high blood pressure is acting up

Gogo:Heeeeh so uthi ndiphambene mna caba lento ithethwa ndim yi Off side(are you saying that I am crazy and that I am talking an off side)

Sam:Ma of cause not but I am not pregnant

Gogo:When last did you have your period

Sam>Last month

Gogo:Heavy flow or did you only spot

Sam:Spot

Gogo:(claps once)Umithi man Samthandie kutheni uyiphika nje(You are pregnant Sam why are you being in denial)you no what let's just go to the doctor.

Sam:I'm not pregnant fine let's go to the doctor you will see for yourself and if I was pregnant my body would have showed me signs

Gogo:Get ready and you too Ndoni you getting



tested,you both better pray you not pregnant or you will see what I am made of.

With that being said she left us

Sam:(laughing)I feel sorry for you,heeeeh Gogo is going to kill you

Me:Mxm can we just go already

Sam:(laughing)My nephew is making you cheeking I see

Me:Sam let's just go

.

.

We arrived at the doctors office and Sam was the first one to go in

Gogo:Ndoni you next

Me:Ummmmh ummmh Gogo I'm on my period and I can't take the pregnancy test you know

Gogo:Mmmmh if you say so

Sam walked out

Gogo:When are we getting the results?

Sam:We need to wait for a few hours,Ndoni you next

Gogo:She won't be testing she is in her menstrual cycle

Sam:I'm so hungry yazi maybe you right Ndoni it's possible I have a tape worm

Gogo:Heeeeh hamba Tape worm,I want to meet the father of your baby as in today Samthandie

Sam:Gogo I'm not pregnant yhooooo

.

.

Nurse:The doctor has your results you may came in

Gogo:Let's get going you better pray you not pregnant Sam

We walked into the room and the doctor was

waiting for us

Doctor:Moral support I see please take a seat

Sam:I take it you have my results

Doctor:Yes,congratulations you are three months along, we need to do a scan just to see how the baby is growing

Gogo:I will see you guys at home,Samthandie I want you to come home with the man responsible for this

With that being said she walked out leaving us behind

She was really disappointed how much more will she be when she finds out I'm also pregnant this is going to kill her,no I can't tell her now this is too much

Sam:How....can..I...I don't have any mood swings or morning sickness....Oh Ben is the one having them(crying)

Doctor:Ma'am calm down

Sam:DON'T TELL ME TO CALM DOWN....I....I....I  
CAN'T BE PREGNANT NDONI(crying)

Me:(crying)It's going to be okay sisi we going to  
get through this together,Ben is going to be with  
you all through out your pregnancy

Doctor:Everything is going to be fine now come  
let's see how the little fella is,you need to be  
strong for him right now

Me:Think about my nephew please

Sam:O...okay

.

.

The doctor took us to the scan room,Sam was  
laying on the bed with her face wet from tears

Me:It's going to be fine

The doctor pulled up her shirt,wow she was  
showing already

Me:Sam how do you explain the small yet big

bump

Sam:I don't know Ndoni..This is too much

Doctor:(smiling)Are you guys ready to meet the new addition

Me:(smiling)Can't believe I'm going to be the first one to meet him,his father is probably going to cry

cause he missed all of this

Sam:So I have to deal with his emotional self for the next 6 months

He than applied some gel and we all fixed ourselves to the small screen

This moment right now made me remember how me and Ty hard our baby's heart beat for the first time I already love my peanut

The room was filled with the sound of heartbeats

Sam:Why does it sound like there is not one

heartbeat

Doctor:(smiling)Congratulations you are carrying triplets

Me:(screaming)How is it even possible

Sam:I am a twin Ndoni...This is to much for me

Doctor:I will need to admit you today

Me:Why is there something wrong

Sam:Are my babies okay?

Doctor:They are fine for now but I'm worried about your blood pressure it's too high,you carrying triplets which is a high risk pregnancy both for you and the kids

Me:Let me call Ben he needs to come down here

Sam:I am to speechless right now

Doctor:Let's clean up and get you ready for admission mommy

[07/05, 10:05] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-SEVEN

.

.

SAM

.

.

Ndoni:You are going to be fine,listen I need to go home

Me:Can't you wait till Ben and Ty get here

Ndoni:They are taking their time

Just then Ben walked in his eyes were puffy and red...and I know he was crying as always

Me:Don't tell me you were crying Ben hayi this is getting out of hand

Ndoni:Where are the kids?

Ty:Dropped them off at your grandmother house speaking of which have you told her about the pregnancy

Ndoni:Take me home,Sisi take care of yourself I will see you tomorrow

Ty:She meant to see we anyways,we will see you tomorrow enjoy your stay

Me:Aren't you going to wait for Ben?

Ty:I can't deal with his moods swings,so naaa he is spending the night here

Ben:You are lying I was worried

Ty:Can you try and explain how you cried on our way to the airport which made people look at us as if we are gay no dude till you find out what the problem is you are on your own

Ben:(crying)Are you dumping me,you leaving me after everything that we have been through together

Ty:See what I'm talking about,Sam will talk later after he has calmed down,Babe let's go

Me:Thanks Ty,enjoy the rest of your evening,Ndoni thank you for everything love



Ndoni:Just make sure you rest we don't....oooooh let's go babe

Ty:What was that all about

Ndoni:I will tell you in the car,goodnight guys  
oooooh Ben

Me:Just leave him he will be fine

Ty and Ndoni left leaving me with an emotional Ben,I wonder why am I not the one experiencing all of this Ben

Me:Ben come and join in bed nana

.

.

He made his way to other side and joined me in the small bed at least it's not small

Me:Why are you crying?

We were both facing each other he had his head on my chest,he should be the one comforting me not the other way around

Ben:When I got the call you were in hospital I just lost it...I don't see myself spending the rest of my life alone,I know we are going die some day but I still want you to be around,I still want to grow old together..I just lost it love

Me:I am perfectly fine babe

Ben:Than what seems to be the problem?

Me:Promise you won't freak out

Ben:(crying)You dying aren't you

Me:Hayi man Ben who said anything about dying(angry)

Ben:Baby I'm sorry that I don't want to lose you,so tell me what's wrong whatever it is we will get through it together

Me:I'm pregnant

Silence filled the room

Ben:How far are we?

Me:(crying)You not mad?

Ben:Why would I be come on Sam this is the best news ever

He started giving me kisses

Me:(laughing)Okay okay stop,we 3 months pregnant

Ben:I told you were pregnant no wonder you have been gaining weight

Me:That's not all

Ben:Tell me

Me:We are having triplets

Ben:You lie

Me:No I'm being real,this is the reason why I have been admitted the doctor says my high blood pressure is high so they want to monitor it

Ben:You need to start relaxing Sam I don't want anything to happen to my princesses

Me:Who said we having girls?

Ben:I can feel it babe,so I need to do right by you and your family...does Gogo know about this

Me:Yes she even said that I should not come back home without bringing the man responsible for this...she is so disappointed in me I never meant to hurt her like this especially after everything she has done for me

Ben:Ssssssh ssssssh remember don't stress I will take care of this

Me:You promise?

Ben:I promise

.

.

Me:I'm hungry feel like having some McDonald's

Ben:You not feeding my kids junk Samthandie

As we were busy aguring the doctor walked in

Doctor:This is cute you must be Mr

Vilakazi...hang on are you Benjamin Vilakazi

Ben:One and only

Doctor:Sange at your service,it's an honour to meet you sir I have heard so much about you

Ben:I hope all good

Sange:Yes sir,I have good and bad news

Ben:Start with the bad

Sange:We have noticed that your wife's high blood pressure is not coming down as we anticipated so she will be spending some time here until it goes down,we don't want to take a risk

Ben:Okay and the good

Sange:The triplets heart beat is beating at a normal rate as you can see,so now we just have to keep Ms Vilakazi away from stressful situations..That would be all for now enjoy your evening

Ben:Thank you Doc

.

.

Doctor Sange left

Ben:From now on no more stressing and NO to junk food

Me:This is going to be the longest time in my life

Ben:Sam

Me:Yes

Ben:Will you make me the happiest man on earth by agreeing to be my wife?

Me:(crying)Yes yes

Ben gave me one hella of a kiss

Ben:(kissing me)Thank you baby...We need to start looking for a wedding planner

Me:That...I don't want us to have a

wedding...let's go to the Margistrate Court

Ben:Are you being serious right now,babe you can have any dream wedding you want,money is not a problem

Me:I'm being serious love I don't want want a wedding,Ty,Ndoni,John and Shanell can be our witness...and planning a wedding can be stressful maybe we can have it after having the triplets

Ben:Are you sure

Me:Yes

Ben:I will inform my family than the sooner the better can't wait to make you my wife,as soon as you get out of here we are getting married

Sam:I always wanted to elope

Ben:Than we shall do that babe,but let's have a small gathering just for our close family and friends

Me:Okay fine

Ben:There will also be a cake

Me:You should just plan the whole thing

Ben:This is our day we both have a say and I have the perfect person to plan the dinner

Me:Who?

Ben:Shanell

Me:Is she a wedding planner

Ben:She once was but after she had Que she called it quits

Me:Why?

Ben:She wants to be a hands on mother that's all

Me:And John is fine with that

Ben:It's not like they need the money,John is so loaded he can feed the whole off South Africa

Ben:We also need to do some house hunting the house is too small,now that our family is expanding we need something big



Me:The house is perfectly fine Ben

Ben:I also need to take a leave

Me:That won't be necessary the kids won't be arriving any time soon

Ben:We need to go out on a vacation just you and me

Me:And the kids

Ben:You also need to meet my mother and sister

Me:Can't we pass that stage

Ben:You have been running away for two years Sam

Me:What if they don't like me

Ben:They will like you,now let's get some sleep we have a long day ahead of us

Me:Good night

.

.

Ben: You have made me the luckiest man, finally we are going to have our little Warona and siblings, thank you for loving me and my kids. You are my Queen the one who holds the keys to my heart

Me: Baby and thank you for loving me when I couldn't love myself, thank you for allowing me to be a mother to our kids and these one too.

Ben: Heeeeee baby

Me: What

Ben: My empire is expanding.... Hahahaha John and Ty shot blanks and as for me The Vilakazi is a man Heeeeee

Me: (laughing) Uyindoda emandondeni myeni wam (You are a man among men, my husband)

Ben: Tshni mfazi wam hayi ndingu Tata kubo, funeka bazo buza apha kum bakweziwa njani (My wife they should come and ask for

some tips on how it is done)

Me:Let's sleep at least you are not crying,love you

Ben:Love you too Ms Vilakazi

.

.

MPHO

.

.

I was now waiting for my father to come and pick me up from the airport.

It's been two years since I last placed my foot in South Africa,when I left I thought my relationship with Wesley would work out but unfortunately we just drifted apart..so we called it quits after constant therapy,we were just different people and it took us two years to figure out that we are just not meant to be.

My father was already waiting for me at the departure side

Me:Daddy

Dad:Princess is that you,you have grown pumpum

Me:Oh daddy it feels good to be home

Dad:let's get you home than

.

.

We were now in the car

Me:So how are the kids

Dad:I wish I knew ever since you left Benjamin has cutted any access of us having the kids...The last time we saw them it was when you were still around,my guys say that Thando had grown into a beautiful girl and Khazmila looks handsome just like his father

Me:(tearing)How I miss them...I last saw Mila

when he was 6 months he must be 2 already...and Ben is a very private person he doesn't upload and by pictures of the kids

Dad:So what are you going to do

Me:I am going to fight for my family and that includes Ben to,we belong together daddy

Dad:What if he has moved on

Me:Than she will have to start packing I don't want to play dirty with her,if she knows what's good for her she will go back to where ever she comes from,Ben is mine and I don't mind fighting for him...We have been through so much together our love can conquer this storm too

Dad:I'm glad you are back to your sense pumpum,and if you need any help my door is opened for you

Me:Thank you daddy

.

.

Benjamin Vilakazi I'm back

[07/05, 10:06] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-EIGHT

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ty:So when are you planning to tell your mother Ndoni

Me:Why are you shouting jeez,I will tell her when the time is right Tyrese

Ty:When is the right time Ndoni or is it when you give birth

Me:(quite)

Ty:Oh hell No you are not keeping my baby a secret,we are going to tell your mother today

Me:Can you please stop..This is going to kill her  
okay

Ty:We can't hide this pregnancy for ever Ndoni

Me:Can I at least think about it

Ty:I'm giving you a week if you don't tell her now  
I will do the talking

Me:Aren't you scared that Bab'Dlamini might  
strangle you...He doesn't want us to have  
boyfriends,he always say he wants to keep us in  
a bottle now this is going to disappoint him...I  
will just talk to him,he is easy to talk to  
compared to Gogo

Ty:As long as you tell them soon,you only have  
a week Ndoni....so tell me what's wrong with  
Sam

Me:(smiling)She is pregnant Babe and Ben is  
the one experiencing the mood swings,crazy  
cravings and also morning sickness isn't it cute

Ty:(laughing)Finally we know what's wrong with

him,I need to call him

Me:That's not all love,they are not expecting one like us but three babies

Ty:(smiling)Maybe we should call our baby pea since you know they are the one expecting kittens but how is it possible

Me:Sam is a twin

Ty:Wow we should thank God for blessing us with one pea,I was not looking forward to twins maybe in future

Me:(smiling)Me too I am just glad that we are going to have a pea

Ty:Her first name is Pea

Me:Pea Bean Gibson

Ty:(laughing)I like the sound of that

Me:So tell me didn't Millie throw a tantrum when she heard the twins are coming down here



Ty:No she's actually was happy when she heard that there will be coming down here

Me:I want a McFlurry so when are we going to tell the twins

Ty:Let's wait for few months remember we still in the first trimester

Me:Pea is going to come out just fine,I am just grateful that I am done with the exam

Ty:About that what is your plan when the baby comes

Me:I am going to attend until my due date than after giving birth I will go back

Ty:Are you going to handle school and a new born baby,I mean having a baby is not an easy job and I know for sure is that you are not going to what to leave her alone

Me:For now the plan is I am going to go to school

Ty:Okay let's get you guys supper than

Me:You sleeping at the BnB

Ty:You know that Ms Nceba is a good friend of mine

Me:Send my greetings to her I miss her beautiful face,back in the day she showed me and Sam flames..wake me up when I'm close home

Ty:We nearly home just hold on a little

Me:I love you

Ty:(smiling)And I love you both

He said that while rubbing my flat tummy

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Sam was peaceful sleeping next to me,still can't

believe I am going to be a father again, she is going to bless me with three bundle of joys I can't wait to meet them already. I hope they inherit their mothers looks, jealous down my wife is a dark beauty my black pearl.

Me: I promise that I am going to keep you and your mother safe even if it's the last thing I do.

I still couldn't bring myself into telling Sam about my gangster life style, even though I am no longer about that life but still it's a part of me.

I had called my uncles and they agreed on sending a letter this week, if everything goes well Sam will be my wife by the end of this week.

There is some bad vibe I had about Doctor Sange he is way to hyper for my liking and I need Sam to get a new gynae this Sange guy does not doing for me. My phone rang and it was Sipho my other right man

I got out off the bed making sure I don't wake Sam

.

.

Me:Thetha ntwana

Sipho:Sho bozza,your Ex has arrived in South Africa

Me:My Ex who are you talking about

Sipho:Mpho bra yam

Me:What the...what is she doing back in South Africa

Sipho:I don't know boss

Me:Keep tabs on her I want you to report every movement she does,it's possible she will call me later on this week...Thank you for letting me know

Sipho:Sure boss

What the heck is Mpho doing back in South Africa not that it's any of my business all I want is for her to stay far away from me and the kids

and if she dare tries some funny business I will teach a lesson I don't even care if she is Thando and Mila mother, she only gave birth to them nothing more nothing less

I went back to bed

Sam: Where were you

She is a light sleeper

Me: I had to take a call

Sam: Is everything okay, your body is tense

Me: Yes everything is fine let's sleep

[07/05, 10:06] W: CHAPTER THIRTY-NINE

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Gogo and Bab'Dlamini were waiting for me in

the lounge

The tension in the room was tense, Bab'Dlamini was his normal self always smiling and as for Gogo she was fuming with angry even though she tried to hide it

Me: Is everything okay

Gogo: And why don't you tell us.. where is Samthandie... oh so she decided not to come home after everything she has done, she is busy running around well pregnant sies

Me: Umh... Sam has been admitted and I don't know when she is coming back home

Bab'Dlamini: Haibo is everything fine with her and the baby, and why didn't you tell us Ndoni

Gogo: There are so good in hiding stuff these two, and you know I really don't believe anything that comes out of their mouths

Bab'Dlamini: We need to go and see her Nkosikazi(wife)

Gogo:(laughing)Who me I will do no such you can go and see her for all I care about I really don't care.

Bab'Dlamini:You really don't mean that Nompilo it us just anger talking

Gogo:Can you please give us a moment I would like to have a talk with Ndoni

Bab'Dlamini:Remember what I said Nompilo they need you now more than ever,don't make drastic decisions that will end up ruining your relationship with the kids,you need them as much as they need you

Bab'Dlamini walked away,leaving me and Gogo in the lounge

I have never seen my grandmother this angry in my life

Gogo:So tell me Ndoni is there anything you would like me to know

Me:Like what ma

Gogo:You think I am stupid neee,maybe this will refresh your mind

She threw me the a scan of pea

Oh Lord this is not happening,how did she get this what was she doing snooping in my stuff

Me:Ummmh....ma...I...can explain...why did you go through my stuff

Gogo:You and your sister are pregnant mind explaining that,you are trying to tell me that you are engaging in sexual intercourse..what does the bible say....heeeeeeee this is the thank you I get after everything....

Me:No sex before marriage,I'm sorry Gogo

Gogo:Say that to someone who cares you know what you both make me sick

Me:Ma we are sorry we didn't...

Gogo:A.a a.A.a.a.a don't tell me you are sorry Ndoni you both knew what are the consequences of having sex without a condom



and now you are both pregnant tell me Ndoni who is the baby's father

Me:(crying)I'm sorry Gogo

Gogo:TELL ME WHO THE BABY FATHER IS  
NDONI

Me:Mr Gibson Gogo

Gogo:Heeeeeeeeeeeeeeh(claps once)After asking you not to get involved him and wena you do the opposite

Since I could not answer her she than did something I never thought she would do,I felt her hand on my face and later on she started hitting me with a broom.

The only thing I could do is to cover my tummy,I may have brusies but I don't think I would survive having a miscarriage,I love pea even though he is not yet a real baby but still he is there and I will do anything in my power to protect him

.

.

Bab'Dlamini came running in the room together with the kids

Bab'Dlamini:Hayi hayi Nompilo this is not how you deal with matters,what if she miscarries.They both made a mistake but this is not the way off doing things

Thando:Why is there blood on the floor?

Ella:Mommy you are bleeding?

My worst fear has been confirmed,I have lost him I couldn't protect him

Bab'Dlamini:Kids go back to your room

Travis:But mommy is bleeding,you need to call dad grandpa

Bab'Dlamini:Nompilo look what you have done,Ndoni let's get you to the hospital

Gogo:(crying)I am sorry I...I...I

allowed my anger to cloud my judgement...I'm fine

Bab'Dlamini:Just go and attend the kids  
Nompilo,Ndoni we won't wait for the ambulance  
I'm taking you to the hospital myself

At the moment my mind zoned out,I just didn't understand nor know what was happening around me

Bab'Dlamini:Ndoni snap put of it we need to get you to the hospital

Me:He's probably dead..what's the point

Bab'Dlamini:We are not sure yet baby now come let's get going

Me:(crying)I can't lose him Tata...I...I he is a part of me....I..I was suppose to protect him....I failed him

Bab'Dlamini:And you not if we act right now,let's go to the hospital I am very hopeful that you are still carrying the little guy

.

.

We quickly went into the car

Bab'Dlamini:Are you having any cramps

Me:Nothing at the moment

Bab'Dlamini:That's good,I suggest you call the baby's father he needs to be here

We got to the hospital where nurses attended to me.

I still don't know whether pea is dead or alive,we will just have to wait and see.

.

.

MPHO

.

.

I was settling well back home but my mind kept

on thinking about Ben and the kids. My mother who happens to be Ben's mother best friend walked in looking all down. My mother is always bubbly and smiling it's very rare for her not to be her loud self

Me: Mommy is everything okay

Mom: Yes baby, so how are you settling in

Me: It feels good to be home but my home is where my kids and Ben are

Mom: About that baby I have something to tell you

Me: Sounds serious

Mom: Mmmm let's take a walk I don't want your father finding out about this

Me: Okay

.

.

Mom: Ben is getting married and by the looks of

things it is possible he will be a married man by the end of this month. His mother is so happy I guess they can't wait to meet the young women who finally tamed their wild son

Me:(laughing) Nice one mom

My mom didn't smile all she did was to look at me with pity

Me: No it can't be true Ben belongs to me

Mom: There is nothing wrong with him getting married though after all you are the one who left him, instead of sitting down and solving things with him you left him for another man. And now you expect him to drop everything just because you are back

Me: I can't believe you are taking his side mom

Mom: Come on Mpho did you really think he would wait for you for two years, while you are having the time of your life being busy with that old hag, was he suppose to wait for you, oh baby

time waits for no one

Me:I am not going to let that wedding happen

Mom:(laughing)Are you sure you not mentally ill...admit it you lost Mpho if you stayed around you were going to be Ms Vilikazi but someone bet you to it

Me:I AM THE MOTHER OF HIS KIDS

Mom:Baby in case you don't know let me tell you,this is the 21st century and having kids for a man does not guarantee you will have a ring on that finger,let's be honest who do you think was raising your kids while you were aboard

I am very sure they didn't raise themselves and even Ben had some assistance,I must say I applaud the women who stood by Ben,who accepted him with his children it is very rare for a women to raise another women kids,let's talk about Mila whom you last saw when he was only 6 months old and I am pretty sure he doesn't even know you as his mother.You have

lost Mpho Ben is no longer yours, you might have children together but his heart belongs to someone else and that someone else is not you my baby.

Me: Spare me the lecture mom if I can't have him than neither can she

.

.

Mom: Don't start something you won't be able to finish Mpho and as for one you should know that no one plays with Benjamin Vilikazi and gets away with it

Mpho: Than I am going to be the one who plays and gets away

Mom: Don't say I didn't warn you

Me: See why you and me don't get along you always have a way of bringing me down, which is why I prefer dad than you

Mom: That's because I am your mother and it is



my duty to tell you where you are wrong and as for your father he needs to stop giving you everything you want,at the end of the day Mpho fact still remains you are the one who walked away from Ben not the other way around.And honey I am going to the wedding whether you like it or not...I am giving him my blessings

Mom:You need to start finding a hobby or something and stop whatever you are planning,you are not getting Ben,you made your bed now lie on it.

.

.

With that being said she walked out,if my mom thinks I am going to back down then she has another thing coming

Me:Blade I need you to get me any information about the girl who is marrying Benjamin

.

.

After going through some of my contacts I came across Millie number,two years back she wanted us to join forces and I believe she won't mind even now that's if she still wants Tyrese

.

.

I decided to give her a call,she picked it up after the fourth ring

Millie:Millicent also known as Millie hello

Me:Hey Millie it's me Mpho

Millie:Mpho who?

Me:Haibo Millie don't tell me you don't remember me

Millie:Yazini I don't have time to play the "you know me" game if you don't tell me who you are than I will drop this call

Me:Listen it's me Mpho Thando and Mila

mom,Benjamin Vilakazi girlfriend

Millie:Eeeeeeee in case you don't know you are his ex,don't you know there is someone occupying your space oooo shame you wouldn't know andithi you left Benjamin...anyways you called for?

Me:I need your help...I want to remove that trap and I can't do it on my own

Millie:Do you know that Benjamin is a dangerous man and he wouldn't mind killing you

Me:I do know he is dangerous which is why I am risking my all to get back together with him

Millie:Are you sure you want Benjamin?

Me:I wouldn't have called if I wasn't serious

Millie:Meet at Lala Viga Lounge,let's say in a hour me and my partner would like to have a word with you

Me:Of cause I will see you then,thank you

Millie:(laughing)No thank you see you soon

With that being said she dropped the call,now I need to get ready.Mom and Dad will need to have dinner without me

.

.

Dad:Aren't you joining is for supper pumpum

Me:No daddy you will have to have dinner without me

Mom:Are you avoiding me because of the talk we had

Me:No mom look rents I would love to have a chat with you but my friends are waiting for me

Dad:Which friends

Me:You won't know them,see you soon don't wait up

.

.

TOBBY

.

.

I was sitting with Millie she claims she received a call from Benjamin baby mama

Me:Are sure we should involve more people in this

Millie:The more the merrier and besides we both want Benjamin down...before we didnt know how we are going to get through him but now an opportunity has presented itself we need to grab it with both hands

Me:Mmmm if you say so

As we were waiting for this Mpho,Millie was briefing me in about who she is and so forth.

.

.

After what seemed like forever she finally

walked in I must say Ben has got a taste in women this Mpho chick is flames....but got to say Ben current girlfriend is taking the cup what's her name Sam something along those lines

Mpho:Sorry to keep you waiting I was looking for some parking space

Millie: Don't worry love we just got here,please have a sit

Mpho kept on stealing glances of me she must be mistaken me for Tyrese,we really look alike but if you would look closely we have the same features but Tyrese has a mole on his right cheek and mine is on the left.

Millie:Oh my where are my manners,Mpho this is Toby Tyrese twin brother and Toby this is Mpho

Me:Nice to meet you Mpho

Mpho:Like wise Toby,I was taken back I

thought that Millie and Tyrese are back together

Millie:Love I have been waiting for two years

Me:Let's get to the chase,what's your plan on taking down Benjamin

Mpho:Mm you don't waste anytime I see,while simple I kill her

Me:And how are you planning on doing that

Mpho:By simply kidnapping her on her wedding day

Millie:(shocked)Haibo Benjamin is getting married to Samthandie,hayi sisi you have some catching up to do

Mpho:Ooooh so her name is Samthandie short for Sam

Millie:Yes and I must say friend Benjamin really loves Sam

[07/05, 10:04] W: IN CASE I DON'T POST IN THE AFTERNOON

.

.

CHAPTER FOURTY

.

.

TOBBY

.

.

Me:So how are you planning to pull this off,when exactly?

Mpho:As I said in a month time,my mother says Ben will be a married man by the end of this month

Me:You do know that I can't use my guys for they will know that they belong to me



Mpho:Oooh don't worry about that my father will provide me with guys to pull off the job

Me:Okay but don't you think it's too soon to put your action into motion

Mpho:Why should I delay I can't wait any longer

Millie:That is what I have been telling him for the past two years

Me:Okay let me ask you something Mpho

Mpho:Shoot

Me:(smiling)Do you know that Ben is having you followed,meaning that if he finds out you are meeting up with us he will know that something is up,and they of course will strike us before we even put our plan

Mpho:But how did you know...I.I

Me:Like I have eyes and ears every where so I suggest you lie low for a while

Mpho:I need a drink

Me:(smiling)I just need you guys to be patient just for a little while...I promise you they will finally be yours

Millie:I hope you right,that means we need to stop meeting

Me:We will be in contact via cell phone

Mpho:Okay guys

Me:I think we are done now and that is my queue to leave

Millie:Haibo the night is still young and we need to celebrate

Me:I will only celebrate when both TYRESE and Benjamin are done and dusted

Mpho:I hope you do mean you are going to kill them

Me:Fear not,ladies see you in three months time

Millie:You haven't find a buyer yet?

Mpho:What are you talking about

Me:She will fill you in,we are have 10 people who all want her but you do know that we will sell her to the highest bidder

Millie:Yazi even if I don't get Tyrese at least I am going to be a millionaire

Me:(laughing)Ladies enjoy your evening

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

I was sleeping when my phone kept on ringing non stop,it's possible that Ndoni what's some Zinger wings

Me:Yes

Caller:You speaking to Bab'Dlamini Ndoni's grandfather you need to come to the the hospital Ndoni has been admitted

Me:What the...is she fine...is the baby fine

Bab'Dlamini:I still don't know son they haven't told me anything yet just get here Ndoni needs you

Me:Yes...The name of the hospital

Bab'Dlamini:St Dominic Private Hospital you will find me waiting for you at the reception

Me:Um okay

Bab'Dlamini:I suggest you call a cab,I don't want you causing an accident

Me:Thank you I will see you in a sec

With that being said he dropped the call,at the moment I was worried about Ndoni on how she feel if she loses pea,many women can't handle having a miscarriage.

.

.

Me:Where is she?

Bab'Dlamini:They are still with here

Me:Why are they taking so long,tell me what really happened?

Bab'Dlamini:Calm down son let's concentrate on Ndoni we will talk about this later

Just than the doctor came to us

Doctor:Good evening my name is Dr Evans are you Kourtney Tarisha Smith family

Me:Can you get to the point

Bab'Dlamini:Excuse my son he is just worried about the mother of his child,please doctor tell us how she is

Doctor:I understand,I have good news we managed to stop the bleeding and luckily the baby is safe,she needs to give her body some rest after all the beating she got I am still shocked that the baby is safe from harm.

Bab'Dlamini:Thank God,tell me how long is she going to be in

Doctor:A day or two

Me:Can we see her

Doctor:Only one person may see her she needs rest,now if you can excuse me

The doctor left I am still shocked that Ndoni got a beating,who in their right mind can hit a pregnant women.

Who ever who did this is so going to pay

Bab'Dlamini:I guess I should get going than we will see her tomorrow

Me:Who is the reason behind Ndoni almost losing the baby

Bab'Dlamini:Son calm down we will talk about this tomorrow

Me:If you are not going to tell me than I am going to find out for myself,in case you know the person tell them that I am coming after them and they are going to regret ever putting my wife's and son/daughter life in danger

With that said I walked to Ndoni's room leaving Bab'Dlamini shocked and scared at the same time.

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

I woke up to a sound of beeping

Aaaah where am I, just then it all came flashing into my mind what occurred earlier on. Tears streamed down..Ass I was crying Tyrese walked in his eyes were red

Me:We lost pea..right he didn't make it(crying)

Ty:No baby he is fine you just need to relax

Me:(crying)No no no no you lying Tyrese I saw the blood

[07/05, 10:07] W: CHAPTER FORTY-ONE

.

.

GOGO

.

.

Thando:Is Aunt Ndoni going to be okay

Travis:Is she going to die

Ella:Is she sick

Me:Kids everything is going to be fine,now sleep  
you will see Aunt Ndoni in the morning

Travis:But she was screaming

Me:That is because she has stomach ache,now  
sleep we have a long day ahead

Thando:Khulu where is mommy

Me:She is in the hospital nana

Thando:Is she going to die too?

Me:Babies the hospital is not a place where



people die,it's a place that helps them get well while they are away from home

Ella:So Aunt Sam is sick?

Me:Yes Ella you are going to see them both tomorrow,now come on be good just like Mila who is sleeping

Ella:Goodnight granny sleep tight

Travis:Night gogo

Thando:Night Khulu sleep tight,we love you

Me:And I love you too babies now sleep tight and don't let the bed bugs bite.

.

.

With that being said I walked out of the room leaving the door open in case they have nightmares I hope they don't cause they are still young to understand what was happening.

.

.

I was tossing and turning waiting for my husband to arrive,I really hope that Ndoni and the baby are fine it was never my attention to hit her.

Just as I was going to switch off my light on the side of the bed my husband walks in.I can't read his expression

Me:Are they are okay?

Bab'Dlamini:What were you thinking Nompilo beating a pregnant women knowing very well that she can easily lose the baby,didn't I tell you to let this go but know you wanted to deal with this your way,which lead to Ndoni being hospitalised.

Me:Forgive me my husband I allowed my anger to take control of me,I was still trying to come to terms with Samthandie pregnancy now Ndoni is also pregnant,Am I wrong to feel disappointed and hurt that they were not careful

in enough, is it wrong as a mother to want only good things for her children..

I know that my actions do not justify what I did was right but I was just trying to deal with those emotions and Ndoni happened to be there

Bab'Dlamini: And I understand my love but I won't say I'm not disappointed on how you handle the situation what's important is that they both need you more than ever, they need your guidance on this journey that they are about to take. They have disappointed us but what matters is that now we know and we need to have a way forward

Me: I just hope that Ndoni forgives me I don't know what I will do without her

Bab'Dlamini: You are very lucky that she didn't lose the pregnancy for it will have caused a drift in your relationship with her, at the end of the day you are human and you are a parent what's important is that you voice out how you feel to

the girls and then move on,we can't change the past but we can change the present and look forward for the future.

.

.

Bab'Dlamini:We may not understand why certain things happen but it is very important that we stick together as a family

Me:What have a done to deserve such a loving and caring husband like you,they always say that one falls inlove once in a life time,but right now none of that is true cause I have you right now

Bab'Dlamini:The feeling is mutual my love,I am your husband and it is my duty to tell you where you are wrong so that you will be able to learn from your mistakes so that you won't do it again in future.There is no such that an older person is wiser than the young yes at times the older one knows life more than the young one

for they have been here long enough than the young...The most important thing is that we learn from each other cause at the end of the day no one is perfect.

Me:That's true indeed my love

Bab'Dlamini:Let us sleep maybe Ndoni will be discharged,we have to go and see them

Me:Yes we will

Bab'Dlamini:Good night Nompilo

Me:Night Samuel

.

.

I hope Ndoni will forgive me,how I miss having my babies with me..This is not the home welcoming I was expecting but what's important is that God has blessed us with these pregnancy..can't wait to meet them.

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ty:Calm down Ndoni the baby is fine,you are both fine

Me:(crying)I thought I have lost him

Ty:Ssssh baby everything is going to be fine now

Me:Okay,can you join us in bed we want you to hold us

Ty:Of cause baby,let me take of these shoes

Ndoni:You mean your sticky feet

Ty:(laughing)Yeah right you love these smelly feet of mine

Ty got in on the other side and he was holding me tight

Ty: Tell me who did this

Me: Just let it go Ty, we are fine aren't we

Ty: You almost lost our baby Ndoni what's fine about that

Me: I don't want to talk about it Tyrese in fact just let it go

Ty: Ndoni you better tell me who is behind this if not you better pray I don't find him/her for they will be hell to pay

The way he said it sent chills

Me: Okay fine Gogo is the reason why I'm here... she knows I am pregnant and I think she lost it

Ty: But still it doesn't give her the right to hit you, you are pregnant for crying out loud

Me: See why I didn't want to tell you, the good thing is that she knows

Ty: Maybe it's time we get married Ndoni the

sooner the better

Me:Don't you think it's too soon

Ty:Come on Ndoni we have been dating for two years now I think it's enough to tie the knot,I just want you out of that house...not that I hate your grandmother or anything but I think it's for the best

Me:I don't want you to marry me just because we are having pea

Ty:I was going to pop the question on your birthday,now will you marry me

Me:No surprise dinner,ring?

Ty:You will get a ring on your wedding day

Me:Fine I will marry you

Ty:Let's seal that with a kiss

Me:If I remember clearly you were so scared of kissing me back then you always ran when I brought up the kissing topic,you even turned me



off when I asked you to kiss me

Ty:(laughing)Just sleep Ndoni

Me:Be honest you were scared right

.

.

.

GUYS I AM HELPING OUT WITH PAINTING AND  
STUFF, YOU DO KNOW HOW TIRING THAT  
IS...IT'S SHORT I KNOW

[07/05, 10:07] W: SEASON FINALE

PART ONE

.

.

CHAPTER FORTHY-TWO

.

.

SAM

.

.

I don't no how long I have been out but it seemed as if I was someone who hasn't slept for months

Ben:Baby wake up your grandparents are on waiting outside

Me:Why didn't you wake me up earlier(panicking)

Ben:Calm down Samthandie,you do know that I can't wake you up...you always look so beautiful with those small pouted lips of yours

Me:It seems like these kids of yours are making me sleepy,is it even possible for someone to get tired just by spending time in bed I want to cook,clean and move around I even miss my babies Ben

Ben:Remember what the doctor said,you also need to take it easy Sam,after being discharged we are hiring someone who will be doing the

house chores and taking care of the kids

Me:That won't happen,I am not even 5 months pregnant Ben I don't want anyone taking care of my family,I am going to handle it just fine

Ben:I am not taking any chances Samthandie

Me:Ben I am pregnant not disable and I am sure Dr Sange won't mind me having some little exercising a bit

Ben:Speaking of which I would like you to get a new doctor

Me:But why Dr Sange is perfectly fine for me

Ben:Remember he is in East London and very soon you will be residing in Joburg

Me:Can I atleast ask him to refer me to a well known Gynaecologist,a good one that side

Ben:You already have a Dr waiting for you baby

Me:But I really like Dr Sange

Ben:Mmmm it will be your last day seeing him

Me:You can let the rents in I'm done,I feel like having something meaty phela this rabbit food is not fulfilling

Ben:I will try and get you something only because my kids want some,I will leave you guys

Me:Please don't go

Ben:I may be your baby daddy but until I put a ring on that finger,some home affairs will have to miss me cause I am not yet your husband and of I know you are going to tell me everything

Me:When are your uncles arriving

Ben:Later this afternoon

Just than Gogo and Bab'Dlamini walked in,I really didn't want Ben to leave me alone but he is right.

.

.

MPHO

.

.

I was telling dad about the plan and he wanted to help me out with it, mom was busy preparing breakfast. We may be rich and stuff but my mom no matter how busy she is always makes sure that she prepares supper for us.

Dad: Pumpum are you sure about this, you do know that we will be making an enemy out of Vilakazi

Me: Daddy I am sure about this, so are you going to provide the guys

Dad: Anything for you princess

Just as we were talking my mother walked in

Mom: Sorry to keep you guys waiting

Dad: It's fine, so any plans for today

Me: I will be spending some time here before I

go and see the kids

Mom:The kids are not around

Dad:And how do you know that?

Mom:Their paternal grandmother who happens to be my best friend told me

Me:So where are they,when are they coming back to Joburg,I want to see them

Mom:You will see them after the lobola negotiations that's if Benjamin and his family will allow that

Me:His father and older sister were very fond of me

Dad:Excuse me I need to take this call

With that being said he got up and left the table with his ringing phone

Mom:I always told him not to bring his phone in the dining table,and you still think they feel the some way after you left their grandkids behind

Me:You not letting this go are you

Mom:It's the truth Mpho you left them behind

Me:And I am getting them back,excuse me I have lost my appetite

Mom:You will keep on losing it whenever we talk about the kids

.

.

If mom thinks that I am going to step down than she has another thing coming,and as for Toby and Millie they are to slow for me and I don't think I will be joining forces with them they should continue with whatever plan that they have.

Tick tok tick tok tick tok..

The count down has begin,very soon I will be back in Bens arms just like before

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

Me:You can go in bantu abadala(old people)

Gogo:(laughing)We are not that old son

Bab'Dlamini:Let's get in before the kids come this side

Me:Where are they

Gogo:We will talk about that later,aren't you coming in

Me:No ma I will come in once you call me

Bab'Dlamini:Okay son,let's get in Nompilo

.

My phone rang and it was Shakes

Me:Shakes my man



Shakes:Bozza yam

Me:Talk to me

Shakes:Eish Bozza we don't have anything solid about your baby mama,she just went to a club

Me:Have you been monitoring her movements

Shakes:Yes Bozza and there is nothing shady about them

Me:But why do I have a feeling that she is planning something cause the Mpho I know...

Shakes:(laughing)Is crazy,we will continue to follow her boss

Me:No it's fine,just stop following her

Shakes:Sure boss I will keep my eyes and ears opened

Me:Thanks Shakes,look man I have to go see you in a few days,there is a call coming in

Shakes:Sho Bozza

.

.

After talking to Shakes I answered the unknown number

Me:Hello?

Caller:Is that how you greet the mother of your children?

Me:Mpho?How did you get my number

Mpho:(laughing)From a source of mine,I heard you are getting married very soon

Me:What do you want Mpho

Mpho:Does future wifey know about your other life

Me:Is that why you have called cause if that is the reason than I might as well drop this call,mxm you no what I don't know why I am having this conversation with you

Mpho:I want my kids Benjamin

Me:(laughing)What kids?

Mpho:You don't want to fight me Ben,I can make your life a living hell so don't test me

Me:(laughing)Mpho Mpho Mpho you should go and ask your father what happens to people who threaten me

Mpho:I AM NOT SCARED OF YOU BENJAMIN VILAKAZI

Me:(laughing)That's nice look man my battery is low and I would like to hear all these crazy jokes of yours but eeh anyways toodles

With that being said I dropped the call.

.

.

I really don't know how I am going to tell Sam about my other life but the sooner I do the better,but how can I tell her when she is pregnant I don't want her to lose our babies....I will tell her once she gives birth and that is in 4 months time

.

.

I AM TO TIRED TO EDITED GUYS

SEASON 2

[07/05, 10:07] W: S2

.

.

NDONI

.

.

Ella:Mommy can we go and see Thando and Mila

Me:Let me first check on your Aunt on how she is doing than we will see if we are able to go

Travis:When is daddy coming back?

Me:You do know that he only comes back later in the evening and remember you guys are visiting your mother I don't want you to be late

Ella:I don't want to go,I love being home with you and daddy(tearing up)

Travis:Can't you tell mommy that she can come and fetch us on the weekend

Me:You both know that we can't do that remember she is your mommy too and I'm sure she misses you both

Ella:It's not like she cares for us when we there she always goes out with her friends

Travis:She doesn't take care of us like you do,mommy is forever on her phone and we spend most of our time with Aunt Sue,please mommy don't send us away

Me:Listen if you both are not enjoying yourselves you can call me and daddy,and I

promise we will come and fetch you but can you guys at least try and see how it goes with mommy than if it doesn't work me and your father will talk about it.

Travis:We can try,so mommy why is your tummy is big

Ella:Because she eats a lot

Me:Heeey take that back

Ella:(laughing)Mommy is crying again

Travis:Ella stop it

Me:(laughing)I wasn't crying I had something on my eye,you both do know that's where Pea is living for the time being

Ella:How did Pea get in there?

Travis:Can Pea hear us,when is he coming out?

Me:(smiling)Of cause he can hear you guys,he still needs to be in my stomach for 4 more months and then he will arrive,which means

that you guys are going to have a little sibling around

Ella:Can't wait for Pea to arrive,we are going to play tea parties and he is also going to be my new doll

Me:(laughing)Baby,when Pea arrives he will be small and the only thing he will want to do,is to sleep,eat and sleep again

Travis:So he won't play games with me

Me:He will baby just that he will be small and he needs to grow

Travis:Has he moved yet

Ella:Let's wake him up

Me:(laughing)Leave my Pea alone

.

.

We all went to the living room,where I always lie down.The twins love it when Pea turns or when

he kicks

We all laid on the carpet which is in the living room and the twins rolled up my t-shirt. I just love how they bond with their sibling

Ella:(whispering)Baby Pea wake up

Travis:Maybe he is sleeping let's allow him to rest,right mommy

Me:Yes baby

Ella:But why is he tired he doesn't do anything

Travis:Mommy said he sleeps alot because he needs to grow

As they were aguring my baby moved,Ella was screaming

Ella:See I told you he is not sleeping

Travis:Mommy can I lie my head on your tummy please

Me:Yes baby

Travis:I also would like to say something to



Pea,since you said he can hear us and Ella  
please be quiet

Travis gently laid his head on my big tummy I  
think he saw it from his father,and he made soft  
strokes which were surely taking me to  
dreamland

Travis:Hello baby Pea it's me Travis your big  
brother

Travis:Mommy are you sure he can hear me?

Me:Yes baby continue to talk to him

Travis:I just wanted to say that I love you baby  
Pea,and that I am going to share my toys with  
you all of them,you can also sleep in my room

Ella:And where am I going to sleep

Travis:You will also sleep with me boo boo but  
you need to understand that baby Pea will also  
have a place in my bed

Ella:Mmmmh

Me:(laughing)Seems like someone is jealous

Travis:I love you baby Pea and I can't wait to meet you,Aunt Sam is going to have her kittens very soon her tummy is much bigger than mommies,be safe in there.Love Travis

Me:Ncooooh baby that's so sweet and baby Pea lobed that now come and give mommy a kiss

.

.

MILLIE

.

.

I was on my way to fetch the twins and I must say the past few months have been hectic for me,my heart was torn into pieces when the man I love married that little brat and on top of that she is expecting his first child.I still wonder what does she have that I don't have,I mean when I got married Tyrese never popped the

question but with this Ndoni he did that in a blink of an eye. Here I was making fun of Mpho not knowing that it will also be me.

I haven't been in contact with Toby for a while now it's been a month since I last saw him I just wanted some time out from him and the plan.

I slowly parked my Audi Q5 on Tyrese drive way, he even brought her a bigger house.

I made my way to the door just as I was about to ring the door Ndoni opened it looking so beautiful and cute at the same time. Her bump complemented her body she is just beautiful

Ndoni: I saw you walking up, please come in (smiling)

.

.

I really don't know why she is smiling cause right now I feel like killing that brat she is carrying but the thing is, the twins are here and

there are guards around I wouldn't make it out alive

Me:Sure so where are my kids

Ndoni:They are just packing up some of their favourite toys,umh would you like some tea,juice coffee?

Me:Mxm you think you are better than me just because you have the ring?

Ndoni:No I don't,can you lower down your voice we have kids in the house

Me:Haha hahaha you will get what's coming to you

Just than the twins walked in running towards Ndoni

Ella:Mommy I don't want to go

Me:You have even turned my kids against me heeeeeeh

Ndoni:Kids can you excuse us for a minute

there is something that I would like to talk with your mother

The kids ran out of the room and Ndoni made her way towards me

Ndoni: Listen and listen to me carefully, you have no right to come to my house with that stinky attitude of yours, you may be their mother but that does not give you the right to address me the way you have just did, and secondly I am not your friend just because I smile with you does not mean you can do as you please the reason why I smile is because of them I don't want to cause unnecessary drama and lastly whether my husband choose me or not that is none of business.

Me: Hahahaha I see.. I wonder how do you deal with knowing that the man who sleeps next to you at night is not the person you think he is

Ndoni: (smiling) I knew you were going to use that against me, that my husband is a

gangster,that he is known as Dragon slayer  
ooooh Millicent I know all about that,you know  
if you keep on doing what you are doing I don't  
mind giving my husband a call and I'm sure you  
don't want to get on his bad side and oooooh you  
said a threat earlier on

"you will get what's coming to you"

mmmh I wonder what my husband will think  
about that,maybe I should give him a call as in  
right now

Me:You just messed with the wrong women  
little brat

Ndoni:(laughing)And you have just messed with  
the wrong little brat,you can take your filthy self  
and leave my house

Me:I'm not leaving without my kids

Ndoni:The very same kids who don't want to go  
with you,who knows you might kill them or sell  
them off,I'm not taking any chances with my

children...may you please leave unless you want me to call security

Me:YOU WILL PAY FOR THIS NDONI,FIRST IT WAS MY MAN NOW MY CHILDREN

Ndoni:Yeeeeeeeh yada yada yada

.

.

I walked out feeling angry at how I did not break her down,I thought hearing that Tyrese is a gangster would have caused a conflict in their relationship but now it has only made it stronger,instead of making her look like a fool I ended up looking like a fool.

My phone rang and it was Toby

Me:You better have good news for me Toby or I'm doing this my on my own way

Toby:Wow what a greeting after a month without speaking,any ways it's time for the plan to be in motion,I have a buyer and he wants her

as soon as possible

Me:She is pregnant

Tobby:We will have to make sure that she loses the pregnancy

Me:And she knows that Tyrese is a gangster

Tobby:His gangster ways are going to make him lose his unborn baby and his newly wife and we will be the last one laughing

Me:After so much of waiting finally we can eliminate that brat

[07/05, 12:29] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER TWO

.

.

SAM



.

.

My mother in law and sister in law are visiting since Ben has gone on a business trip,so they decided to come and help me with the kids and also with the house chores since my mother in law doesn't want any help in the house.I am finally Ms Vilakazi even though the Vilakazi are not happy with me being their daughter in law some still want Mpho as their daughter in law and while others love me but at the end of the day whether they love me or not I am just glad that my husband and kids love me.

.

.

I was in my room when Thando together with Mila came running in

Me:Thando Mila what did I say about running in the house

Mila:Soli mama(sorry mama)

Thando:You said no running in the house ma

Me:And the reason being?

Thando:We might hurt ourselves which can lead us into spending some time in the hospital

Me:Do you want that,being away from daddy,me,Mila and the kittens?

Thando:No mommy and I'm sorry it won't happen again

Me:Remember baby Mila looks up to you,you have to set a good example for him,I just want you both to run outside instead of running inside cause an accident can happen and you don't want that right

Thando:Yes mommy

Mila:Kissy time

Me:(laughing)Indeed it's Kissy time,so where is grandma and aunty

Thando:They in the kitchen they actually have called you to come and have some breakfast,Khulu says she doesn't want her grandkids to starve

Me:They need to get out already

Mila:Missing Mila dad

Thando:Mommy can we please call dad before we go down for breakfast

Me:Let's check if he is awake or not,honey please bring me my laptop we can just face time daddy

Mila:Yeeeeeeeeey yeeeeeeeeey Mila daddy

Thando:Calm down Mila we are going to talk with dad,mom needs to connect with him first

Me:I don't think understands what you are saying baby

Thando:(sighs)I sometimes forget he is still a kid,kids nower days get on my nerves

Me:Haibo and then,uyithatha phi lento  
uyithetheya awuthandi ukuzenza mdala Thando  
yam (and where did you learn that from,you like  
to act like a old person)

Thando:(smiling)Mom okay I'm sorry

Me:Come and join me in bed babies

Thando:Mommy,you going to fall asleep again

Me:No I won't

Thando:Yes you will

As we were busy aguring my mother in law  
called us once again

Thando:I'm going downstairs

Mila:Mila daddy

Me:We will call daddy once we finish having  
breakfast baby,and Mila daddy is still sleeping

.

.

We slowly made our way downstairs and the smell of beacon was filling the room

Me:Mmmmmh this smells nice

Mama:(smiling)And it seems like you will pop any minute now,good morning baby

Me:I can't wait for them to come out already,even though I will miss being catered for and the food but one thing is for sure I miss my figure,morning ma I hope you slept well

Mama:Don't worry baby only few more weeks and you will have them,speaking of which have you decided who you are going to have in the delivery room

Me:I was thinking of having you,Gogo and Ndoni that's if you don't mind ma

Mama:(crying)Oh baby it will be an honor

Thando:Khulu is crying just like daddy

Me:One thing that I'm not going to miss is Ben moods

Mama:He was driving us crazy,let's sit down and have our breakfast before it get's cold

.

.

We were all sitting in the dinner table when the door bell rang

Mama:Are you expecting any guests

Me:Not any unless it's Sis Nikiwe

Nicky:She's my guest and I have invited her for breakfast

Mama:Haibo Nikiwe this is not your house you can't do as you please

Nicky:This is my brother house ma

Me:No ma it's okay

Mama:Hayi Avethandwa she needs to understand that this is not her house nor can she do as please

Nicky:Let me get the door we can't keep our

guest waiting

She left and went to answer the door

Mama:Nana you can't allow Nikiwe to walk all over you,one thing she needs to know is that this house belongs to you and you are the owner and we are the guest

Me:I don't want to fight ma

Thando:Khulu this taste good

Mila:More

Mama:(laughing)You haven't even finished your pancakes Mila and Thando thank you baby

.

.

We continued eating until Nicky walked in with a women who looked like someone I know but I couldn't wrap my head on whom it is

Mama:(shouting)What is she doing here?

Nicky:She wants to see her kids ma

Mama:Heeeh the devil is testing me

Me:Ma what's going on here, who is she

Mama:When I get back I would like to see her gone Nikiwe Vilakazi,Thando Mila go to your play room

Thando:But we not finished

Me:Thando what did I say about talking back at an elder

Thando:Sorry mommy,sorry grandma come Mila let's go

The kids went to their play room and mama was sweating,I really don't know why she is being uneasy about this women

sudden appearance

Nicky:Friend you know how dramatic mom can be why don't you have a sit,or where are my manners Mpho this is Avethandwa also known as Sam she is the women who took your place,Avethandwa this is Mpho Thando and



Mila mother

I really don't know how to act about what I just heard, what is she doing here after leaving her son when he was only 6 months old

Me: I would like you to leave please

Mpho: I want to see my kids

Me: Nikiwe can you kindly ask your friend to leave please

Mama: Nikiwe why are you doing this man, can't you see that Avethandwa is pregnant why are you causing so much drama man

Nicky: I don't like her ma, she needs to know that she doesn't belong here that the ring on her finger belongs to Mpho

Me: Nikiwe I know you don't like me, but you have no right to bring her in my house

Nicky: What are you going to do about that

.

.

While we were busy going back and forth about this, a gun shot filled the room

All I know is that Mpho is holding the gun and she is pointing at me, Mama and Nicky on the other hand are screaming and Mpho on the other hand seems emotionless..since everyone is looking at me I felt something warm falling down my legs

One thing is for sure is that she has killed my babies

Mama:CALL THE AMBULANCE NIKIWE OH MY WORD WHAT HAVE YOU DONE NIKIWE

Nicky:(crying)I.....I'm s....orry A....ve I...I didn't mean for this to happen

Mpho:This is just a warning,I'm coming for you

With that being said she walked out as if nothing has happened

Mama:WE NEED TO CALL BENJAMIN

Me:(crying)Pl....e.....A aaaa...se save my babies

Mama:Avethandwa stay with us baby

Nicky:Mama she is losing so much blood,oh  
buthi is going to kill me

.

.

.

PLEASE LIKE...Dairy-ka-buhlebendalo

[07/05, 12:29] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER THREE

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Me:I need to get going I miss my wife,kids and my little kittens

John:(laughing)Both you and Ty have whack names for your babies like Ty is calling is baby pea and you on the other hand are calling them kittens,can't wait to meet them

Me:My beautiful wife must be lazy

Bonnie:Ever since you got married you no longer fun,you all boring and lame you know Ben you used to be the light of the party

John:You also need to tie the knot Bonnie

Bonnie:The guy I thought was for me actually tied the knot with someone else

Me:(laughing)And I guess that guy is me

John:Speaking of which have you told Sam about the gangster life

Me:Eish about that...while I was thinking of

telling her as soon as she gives birth

Bonnie:Is that a good idea,I mean shouldn't you have told her the moment you started dating her or the moment you made her your wife

Just as I was about to reply my phone rang

Me:Excuse me guys need to get this,it's my mom and you know how she gets

John:Send my greetings and tell her that I will be visiting soon,I want her to make me those marvellous cupcakes of hers

Bonnie:Let me give Ty a call,he should join us

Me:Let me get take this guys

.

.

Me:(smiling)Mom you must be missing me don't worry I'm coming home today

Mom:(sniffing)

Me:Mom is everything okay

Mom:Benjamin baby you need to come back home,Avethandwa needs you more than ever baby

Me:Mom can you tell me what's going on

Mom:(crying)She has been admitted baby....s...hhhhhe got shot today...Ben I can't say this over the phone I need you to come back

.

.

I thought that my mother was pulling a prank on me,I didn't even drop the call..John walked in

John:Dude what the flip...Ben what's going on

Me:Cancel all my meetings I need to get to my wife

John:Can you at least tell me what's going on

Me:My wife just got shoted and I don't know who did it but as soon as I know who is behind

this they better pray to their God for there will be hell to pay,now if you can excuse me there is a bug I need to kill

.

.

NIKIWE

.

.

My name is Nikiwe Vilakazi and I'm 27 years old,Benjamin is my older brother and I'm the last born at home.

Many of you guys are probably wondering why did I allow such thing to happen,to be honest I didn't know that Mpho would pull out a stun like that

Mom:You have really disappointed me Nikiwe after everything that your brother has done for you,did you really had to bring Mpho,what were you planning on achieving?

Me: Mom please believe me I really didn't know that Mpho had a hidden agenda

Mom: You better pray that Avethandwa does not lose her children or their death will be on your account, sies you disgust me Nikiwe

Me: Mama please forgive....if I could turn the hands of time I would please mom don't do this

Mom: Heeeeh what has Avethandwa ever done to you, she has been nothing but a good wife to your brother and also a great mom to your niece and nephew unlike that friend of yours, did she tell you that she is the one who left Ben not the other way around, did she tell you that the last time she saw her son was when he was only 6 months ooh did she maybe tell you that she left her own daughter and now all of a sudden she wants to play mommy to them

Me: (crying) Mom

.



.

We were waiting at the hospital waiting area when my brother walked in,he had that cold look of his and I knew that he is ready to kill

Ben:Where is she?

Mom:She is still in the operating room,the doctor hasn't said anything

Ben:Tell me what really happened mom,who is behind this and where was Mila and Thando?

Mom:Ave grandparents came and fetched them

.

.

My mother started telling my brother everything without leaving a single detail behind,when she was done he gave me a cold look

Ben:Mmmmh you better pray that my wife is fine and my kittens if so....nci nci even dad won't stop me Nikiwe

[07/05, 12:30] W: CROP TOP

.

.

S2

.

.

CHAPTER FOUR

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Nothing is more stressful than knowing that the one you love with every being in your body is fighting for her life in the other room. I don't know what I will do if something happens to my kittens, we don't know their gender yet we

wanted it to be a surprise. They were suppose to arrive in three weeks time and now this happens

Nicky:(crying)Buti I'm sorry

Me:Mom can you tell this little brat of yours to keep quiet or I won't mind pulling a gun on her

She let out a loud cry,I don't care whether Nikiwe is my own sister what she did is out of line,what was she thinking by bringing Mpho into my house knowing very well that Mpho is a psycho

Me:Why are they taking so long?

Mom:They are going to be fine Benjamin,just relax

Me:Heeeh Heeeh you telling me to relax,mom I'm relaxed so relaxed that I don't like what I feeling right now

My father walked in followed by my aunts

Me:What are they doing here?

Mom:They want to see if umakoti is fine

Me:Heeeh seems like I'm being tested today,the very same people who said that my wife is not good enough to be a Vilakazi bride...

Aunt 1:Uphi makoti and why is Nikiwe crying so much,what did you do to her Benjamin

Me:Why don't you ask what she did

Dad:Son you need to hit something,scream,shout do something this is not good for you

Me:Just make sure that my wife and kids are fine,if not that ungrateful daughter of yours will pay

Aunt 2:She is your sister Benjamin and naye umakoti what did she do to upset Mpho

Me:You are not being serious,if you have nothing good to say I suggest you all leave

Dad:Nobody is leaving we are all going to stay here as a family

Me:Than tell them to keep their opinions to themselves

[07/05, 12:30] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER FIVE

.

.

Benjamin and his family were still waiting for the doctor to come and give them news about his wife condition.Tyrese,John and Bonnie walked in

Ty:I just heard it from Ndoni,any news?

Mr Vilakazi:I think it's best if you would kindly leave my family at this time,as you can see this is a family matter and no friends are allowed

Tyrese:No offence Mr Vilakazi as you know my wife happens to be Avethandwa sister

John:And we have every right to be here

Mr Vilakazi:See the reason why I never wanted Benjamin to hang out with these boys

Tyrese:(laughing)Heeeeh I will pretend as if I didn't hear that

Bonnie:I think we made a bad idea by coming,it's clear that we not needed here

Tyrese:Well there need to get comfortable with my presence cause I'm not going anywhere,the women laying in that bad is the mother of my nieces or nephews and I'm not leaving

John:Secondly we didn't come here for you Mr Vilakazi,we came here for Ben together with his family if you have a problem with that go tell someone else,cause we really don't care what you have to say

Tyrese:Speaking of which where is Benjamin

Ms Vilakazi:He went out to have some air

Bonnie:Let me go and check on him

Tyrese:Don't mean to be rude or anything,don't get me wrong Bonnie you know you are my home girl and we all come a long way together

John:I know where this is going but can we have this conversation outside

Tyrese:Excuse us,please let us know when the doctor arrives we will be checking on Ben

Ms Vilakazi:Please take care of my son

Aunt 1:I don't know why you are so blind can't you see we are being punished by the ancestors

Ms Vilakazi:Luzeka we are not having this conversation here

Aunt 2:Vele it's the ancestors after brother got married to you,this family has been having bad luck

Ms Vilakazi:Lungiwe not you too,so please this is not about me or about the family,right now we are gather here for Ben and his family not your personal vendetta that you have against

me.

You all know that I don't believe in such things for all this ancestors thing, is not real and at the end of the day respect my religion in the very same way as I'm respecting yours

Luzeka: See why I never agreed for you to marry her buthi

Mr Vilakazi: We are not having this here

.

.

Tyrese: Look Bonnie I know you mean well and stuff but I think

John: We think

Tyrese: Yes we think it's best if you keep your distance from Ben

John: We all know that you and Ben once had a thing, and as you can see he is going through a tough time



Tyrese:We know you still not over him,and we don't want you to get your hopes up.

John:Benjamin loves Sam,he really would do anything for her

Ben:That does not mean I would cheat on Ave though,you guys need to understand that there is nothing that I will do to cause a drift between me and my wife

Tyrese:We didn't mean it in a bad way bro,remember we don't sugar coat things

John:We keep it real and raw

Bonnie:I think it's best if I go

Tyrese:Bonnie look

She didn't wait for them to reply

John:Sooner or later she needs to know that you are a taken man

Tyrese:Which means you are "off limits",still don't know why you hook up with her in the first

place

Ben:You know whenever I had a fight with Mpho she was always there

Tyrese:Enough about Bonnie she needs to know her place and I don't mind showing her,when it comes to Sam and Shanell no man that's a none go area for me

John:So Ben who is behind this?

.

.

Ben started telling them everything from his sister involvement to Mpho

Tyrese:It's time we put this nut case in place

John:Let's remove her,the world doesn't need people like here

Ben:That's if we find her soon

Tyrese:Don't tell me she went on hiding

Ben:Biza has been trying to track her down,but

it seems like she disappeared just like that

John:She is planning something big Ben

Ben:That's what is scaring me the most,and I do know that she is either going to hurt my wife or my kids

Tyrese:Then we need to tighten up security

Ben:Ave will start asking questions

John:It's time you told her the truth,Shanell knows,Tyrese told Ndoni and now it's you

Tyrese:It's better to tell her before someone else does

Ben:I don't want to lose her guys

John:You will lose her if she hears it from someone else

Tyrese:Allow me to teach your sister a lesson  
Ben

Ben:You never liked her Ty

Tyrese:She is a spoilt brat and a snob she

thinks the world revolves around her

John:If I remember clearly she once had a crush on you

Tyrese:Oh shame baby girl needs to know that this(pointing at himself)belongs to Ndoni,oh my beautiful wife

Ben:(laughing)She is my sister guys

John:Step sister

Tyrese:No offence man,your dad likes to think he is the it where as he had an affair and brought a baby,he hurted mom(Ms Vilakazi)

Ben:Mother(Ms Vilakazi) is so blessed to have three sons who love her so much

John:She(Ms Vilakazi) should have left him that would teach him a lesson

Tyrese:He should take that charcoal daughter of his,mom is a yellow bone

Ben:No guys drop it she is still my sister

Tyrese:I don't need your permission to teach her a lesson,she hurted the kittens now she will pay

John:I'm backing you up

.

.

As the guys were busy talking Ms Vilakazi came out

Ms Vilakazi:My babies the doctor is back

Ben:And?

Ms Vilakazi:He hasn't said anything yet,come we all waiting for you

.

.

Doctor:My name is Doctor Ranveer

Ben:Get to the point

Doctor:Okay I have good and bad news about your wife's condition

Tyrese:Can you just talk

Doctor:We manage save the triplets  
congratulations Mr Vilakazi you are a father of  
two girls and one boy

The whole family started thanking God

Doctor:As you know they are still premature,so  
they will be in the incubator for the time being.

Ben:And my wife how is she

Doctor:The bullet actually went through her  
tigh,no damage has been done,my only concern  
is that the kids lungs are still not fully developed  
which will make them contract infections easily

Ben:(crying)When can I see them...I...I  
w...aaa...nt to see them pl...ease

Doctor:Only one person,the rest will be able to  
see them tomorrow

With that being said the doctor walked out

Tyrese:(crying)You are a dad,once again

John:The kittens are alive,let me give Shanell a call she must be worried

They were all making noise for their brother

Mr Vilakazi:We will be going,we will see Makoti tomorrow

Luzeka:(smiling)Can't wait to see my grandkids

Ben:(laughing)Oh shame don't bother coming tomorrow

Mr Vilakazi:What are you talking about,we need to see the new editions of the family

Lungiwe:(smiling)Makoti is indeed a blessing

Ben:Oh so now you see her as a blessing not so long ago you were calling my wife names,let me get to the point I don't want neither of you near my family and that includes you dad together with Nikiwe,the only person who will see the kids is mom the rest you may leave you are not needed

Mr Vilakazi:You can't do that Benjamin

Ben:I just did dad,you know your way out

.

.

With that being said he left them standing there all shocked and sad at the same time

Tyrese:Let me go and buy the kittens some goodies(smiling)can you believe it John we are uncle's once again

John:Can't wait to see them,I am so going to spoil the princess and prince

Tyrese:Yoooooh some people won't even get a glimpse of how they look,such a sad world

John:Mom we will see you tommorow,do you want a left

Ms Vilakazi:No babies I will be fine

.

.

I AM TO LAZY TO EDIT HOPE THIS INSERT IS



LONG YOU GUYS HAVE BEING  
COMPLAINING,WHERE ARE MY MANNERS  
HAPPY NEW YEAR MY BEAUTIFUL READERS  
WISHING YOU A VERY BLESSED AND  
PROSPERS 2018,LET US START THIS YEAR  
WITH GOD...AND I HOPE WE WILL HAVE A  
GOOD WRITER AND READER  
RELATIONSHIP,IT'S STILL HOLIDAYS AND I  
THINK IT'S FAIR THAT I ALSO ENJOY  
THEM,BARE WITH ME....LOVE YOUR  
ADMIN♥ ♥ ♥

[07/05, 12:30] W: SOMETHING SMALL FOR THE  
TIME BEING

.

.

S2

.

.

## CHAPTER SIX

.

.

### BONNIE

.

.

After Bonnie left the hospital she quickly went home where she was staying with her older sister, as always she came home feeling down and hurt. Her sister Nomhle was sitting in the TV room watching the Karadashians

Nomhle: When are you going to stop doing this to yourself

Bonnie: The moment where Benjamin sees that I am the one for him

Nomhle: You have been saying that for the past 4 years and still he went on and married

someone else

Bonnie:You should be helping me win him back instead of bringing me down

Nomhle:Andithi the last time I gave you some advice,you rejected without even trying

Bonnie:How are we going to pull this through,you don't even have contacts

Nomhle:Now that's where you are wrong baby sister,you know I know names of high people

Bonnie:And those people happen to be against the guys,I can't go behind their backs

Nomhle:Than stop sulking,Ben wasn't yours in the first place,like he said the whole night was a mistake so deal with it or leave it in the past cause that's where it belongs

Bonnie:Still don't know how you are my sister

Nomhle:Vele you always want me to fight your battels will that is not going to happen baby sister,you can stuff your self with ice cream and

see if I care.

.

.

Bonnie left her sister and went to her bedroom where she stared at the picture which she once took with Benjamin, as she was busy staring at the picture her sister walked in

Bonnie:Geeeee can you leave me alone,you said you piece as always now leave Nomhle

Nomhle:You know you are my baby sister and I don't like seeing you like this

Bonnie:I know you mean well and you want to see me happy,but you need to understand that Ben is my happiness he is the father of my future kids.And I am willing to do anything to have him back,sisi call your contact and let's do what needs to be done

Nomhle:You know once I make this call there is no turning back

Bonnie:Can we do this now before I change my mind

Nomhle:Let me go and fetch my phone

.

.

TOBBY

.

.

Me:(smiling)My home girl Nomhle and what do I own such a pleasant surprise

Nomhle:You still a sweet talker I see,listen I have a deal that I would like to talk to you about

Me:I'm all ears

Nomhle:A little bird has told me that you want to settle a score with The Vilakazi and the Dragon Slayer...I take that you will deal with your twin but do you have anything on Benjamin

Me:Nothing at the moment his crazy baby

mama went AWOL on me

Nomhle: Allow me to take care of him but I will need your help

Me: And what will you gain by hurting Benjamin, you do know that he is a dangerous man

Nomhle: Aren't you dangerous Toby, he played with my sisters feelings and I want him to pay

Me: Does your sister know about this?

Nomhle: She is behind me 100%

Me: So what's your plan

Nomhle: Thought you would never ask, I know that his wife is due to give birth any time from now so why don't we kidnap the kids

Me: Wow that's a bit extreme

Nomhle: Don't tell me you are backing out, look I will give you a day or two to decide whether you want to partner with me and my sister, if not I

will find someone else

With that being said she dropped the call,one thing about Nomhle is that she doesn't play around

.

.

BONNIE

.

.

Me:How do you know Tyrese twin?

Nomhle:Right now that's not important,so are you game

Me:You went all out for me,so there is no where that I'm leaving you hanging.

Hope this plan work though,as long as we don't kill them

Nomhle:You need to call Ben and try to find whether everything is fine with his wife

Me:Won't that seem like I'm preying

Nomhle:You will call because you are concerned

Me:Okay let's do this sisi

[07/05, 12:30] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER SIX

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

TYRESE

.

.



My wife is waiting for me in the dinning room,by the look of things she is really worried about the kittens together with Sam

She came rushing to me as soon as she heard me opening the front door

Ndoni:How are they?

I can see that she was crying

Me:They are all fine baby,we will see them tomorrow

Ndoni:Oh thank God,I really thought that she was going to lose the kittens

Me:Can you relax Pea must be feeling restless due to the stress

Ndoni:Oh my baby he hasn't moved since I got the call(rubbing her tummy)

Me:(panicking)Let's go and have him checked out

Ndoni:Come on TYRESE I'm sure Pea is

fine,maybe he is sleeping let's not disturb him

Me:I'm not taking any chances,the house is so quiet without the twins I already miss them

Ndoni:About that there is something I need to tell you

Me:You are going to tell me on the way to the doctor

Ndoni:The twins didn't go home with their mother,they are actually playing in their play room

Me:Why are they so quite it's so unlike them

Ndoni:(laughing)They can be angels when they want too,including Ella you know she is the loud the one

Me:And the naughty one,let me go and fetch them

Ndoni:They are going to be excited once they know we are going to see Pea,they have been dying to meet him

Me:Than it will be a surprise

Ndoni:Before you go up let's talk about what happened when Millicent came to fetch the twins

.

.

Ndoni started telling me everything on how Millicent threatened her

Me:I think it's best if you go and stay with your grandmother until you give birth,I need to sort this out before it gets out hand

Ndoni:What about the twins,they are closing their schools in just a week from now

Me:You will all go together as soon as possible,Millicent is up to something more like she has a plan up her sleeve and if she thinks she has me rounded than she has another thing coming

Ndoni:What about my sister,she needs me

more than anything Tyrese I just can't leave her like that

Me:I will have a word with Ben,maybe both Sam and the kittens can get a transfer in that way you are all going to be safe

Ndoni:Does Sam know about Ben gangster life has he told her

Me:I'm afraid he hasn't

Ndoni:Why is he delaying,he knows that Sam can't deal with lies the sooner he does that the better and one last thing don't you guys see that something has been planned against you

Me:What are you talking about love

Ndoni:Maybe...umh never mind

Me:No I would like to hear what's up

Ndoni:You will say I'm watching to much of that crime channel

Me:I won't say anything until you tell me what's

going on

Ndoni:Okay fine remember this is only a hypothesis,still haven't got the conclusion

Me:I'm listening

Ndoni:Is it not possible that all of this is just a warning about what is about to come,is it possible that someone has a score to settle with you both,the way things I can't shake the feeling that something bad is going to happen.

First Millicent gives me a threat and now Mpho has shot Sam just like that,what's next it is possible that they are going to come after me and pea in out case,and in Ben they are going after Sam and the kittens.It's possible that our lives are in danger and you guys can't see that,you really need to be on gangster mode Tyrese before you lose any one of us

Me:Change of mind you are not going to grandparents house anymore,they will just come to where I will be sending you all,a place

where no one knows that includes other people except for John and Ben.

Ndoni:Like I said it's possible that

Me:Right now what's important is that you and Sam get safe,starting from tomorrow I will be working from home

Ndoni:I love you and I want you to find whoever is behind this,my bet is on that twin of yours

Me:But he...hang on a sec unless

Ndoni:He has something planned for you guys,I suggest you start following brother...you not called Dragon Slayer for nothing

Me:Babe you are becoming corrupt

Ndoni:Hahahaha let's go nana

Me:I will go and fetch the twins

.

.

The Gibsons made their way to the hospital as

much as Ndoni told her husband that everything is fine with Pea,he still didn't want to take any chances.Luckily when they got to the hospital their doctor was still on duty.

Doctor:Pea looks fine

Ella:Mommy is that Pea(smiling)

Ndoni:Yes baby

Travis:Why is he hiding his face

Doctor:That is because he is sensitive to the light,and he was sleeping so you guys disturbed his sleep

Ella:But there is no light in mommy tummy,it's all dark in there

Travis:Pea is always sleeping

Doctor:(laughing)The light sweety comes from the this(pointing at the scan)and Travis he sleeps because he needs to grow

Ella:So me and berries were once like Pea?

Doctor:Yes Ella and look how big you both are

Travis:Mommy look Pea is sucking his finger

The twins were so excited to see their little sibling

Ella:I can't wait to meet Pea mommy

Ndoni:You will meet him very soon baby

Tyrese:I have some news for you

Travis:What is it daddy?

Tyrese:Uncle Ben and Aunt Sam had the kittens today,they had two girls and one boy

Ella:Whhhhhhhhat the kittens are here,when can we see them

Tyrese:Maybe tomorrow baby

Travis:Pea needs to come too

Ndoni:Let's get you guys home

.

.



SAM/AVETHANDWA

.

.

Ben:Baby it's me,come on love wake up

I tired opening my eyes until I was met by a  
bright light and white walls

Me:(husky voice)W...ater

Ben quickly stood up and gave me some water

Ben:Better?

Me:Much better,what am I doing here and why  
is my lower body so painful.

That's when it all started playing like a movie in  
my head

Me:(crying)M...mmmy k...ii.....ttttt...ens

Ben:(crying)Calm down baby they are fine,they  
made baby our kittens made it

Me:(crying)She...sh....oooot me,s...he wants us

dead Ben

Ben:Everything is going to be fine baby

Me:Why are you crying though?

Ben:I thought I lost you guys

Me:Have you seen them,how do they look?

Ben:(smiling)They look beautiful just like their mommy,they still small

Me:Most babies look like potatoes when born

Ben:(laughing)So you are saying my kids look like potatoes(laughing)

Me:(laughing)Yes only for few days though,so we have what?

Ben:(smiling)We have two girls and one boy,atleast I got my girls

Me:And I have my prince

Ben:Mila is going to be so jealous  
avendikusizela(I feel sorry for you)

Me:There is no need for you to feel sorry for me,I got this so when are we naming them?

Ben:Tomorrow love right now I want to cuddle with my lovely wife

Me:Then come and join me Mr

Ben:With pleasure love

.

.

We were now holding each other

Me:So what are we going to handle the situation at hand,in terms with your sister?

Ben:I have forbidden her together with dad and the rest of the family from seeing them,only mom and your grandmother will be helping you with the triplets.

I don't trust any of my family members around my kids,it's possible that they can strangle them while sleeping I don't want to take any chances

with them

Me:But Nikiwe is your sister Ben

Ben:The very same sister who put my wife in danger by calling in that physcho

Me: Don't say it and please calm down,we will talk about this tomorrow when you are much calm

Ben:I love you Ms Benjamin Vilakazi

Me:And I love you Benjamin Vilakazi

[07/05, 12:31] W: SMALL SNACK

S2

.

.

CHAPTER SEVEN

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Sam:I can't sleep Ben

Me:Me too so what do you want us to talk about

Sam:We should come up with names you know

Me:I was thinking maybe mom can name them,that's if you are okay with that

Sam:Has she told you any names so far

Me:Since we didn't know the gender yet,she came up with a few names

Sam:I want to hear them,I also have names of my own

Me:How many names are they going to have

Sam:I was thinking two is enough,remember you said you will be naming our son

Me:(laughing)You still remember that okay I have a few names for my son don't worry nana

Sam:Okay let's hear what mom has

Me:She was thinking maybe Nizibone(Nizzy),Izibele(Izzy) and Zenkosi(Zen) which simply means(see what the Lord has done or see the goodness of the Lord)

Sam:(smiling)Those will be their first names baby,let's hear what you have in mind...and I hope you don't mind that we using the names that your mom has brought up

Me:(smiling)Of cause not baby,as long as you are happy I will be much happy if you give me the honor of naming our son,you can name girls

Sam:Deal,you know I always loved the name Wame and now that we have two girls I was thinking maybe Wame(mine) and Warona(Ours)

Me:Are you sure?

Sam:Very sure baby

Me:So the girls are Nizibone Wame Vilikazi and Izibele Warona Vilikazi...mmmh I like the sound

of that

Sam:Now it's time you come up with a name for our Zenkosi

Me:I was thinking maybe,we will talk about it tomorrow

Sam:(laughing)Are you telling me Vilikazi that you don't have a name for your son

Me:Thing is I want him to have a unique name,I mean he is the son of the well known Vilakazi

Sam:Who came first?

Me:I'm sure my son was the first

Sam:It's possible he came out last

Me:We will have to ask the doctor

Sam:Are they identical triplets

Me:We will see tomorrow right now,I need to start cramping

Sam:So that you know we already have a Thando and I would like it to remain like that

and we also have a Sande so nothing between those lines...I miss my babies

Me:You will see them tomorrow

Sam:I'm not talking about the kittens Ben

Me:I know like I said you will see them tomorrow,now try to sleep

.

.

Sam:Ben are you okay?

Me:Yes why?

Sam:You know you lying right now,come on tell me what's up

Me:The ceiling

Sam:(laughing)You know what I mean silly,now come on tell me what's wrong

Me:I don't know how to tell you this,I should have told you long time but the moment we find out that you were pregnant and that you were at



high risk of losing the kittens I couldn't do that

Sam: Vilakazi uyandoyiksa ke ngku (You are scaring me)

Me: What I am about to say stays between us

I started telling Sam everything and the kind of power that I hold in the gangster world

.

.

Sam: Why didn't you tell me in the beginning?

I need some space Vilakazi, to think about this, yazi I can't believe you kept something this big from me... just leave I want to be alone

Me: I'm not leaving you so you might as well get comfortable with this face of mine, cause baby I'm not going anywhere

Sam: You better get comfortable on the couch than cause you not sharing a bed with me

Me: That is fine with me

Sam:We will talk about this first thing in the morning

With that said she closed her eyes

No crying,no shouting,no screaming that's how a lady my wife is,she never raises her voice but her slience does the talking

for her

.

.

I guess I have to wait and see what she will say in the morning,even though she is not saying anything at the moment I'm glad that she managed to say that we will talk in the morning and that I'm the one who told her instead of hearing it from someone else

.

.

THANK YOU TO EVERYONE WHO CAME UP

WITH NAMES,I REALLY APPERCIATED YOUR  
INPUT GUYS,IF IT WAS POSSIBLE I WOULD  
HAVE USED ALL THE NAMES ♥ ♥ ♥ ♥

♥ ♥ ♥ ♥

.

.

LOVE

.

.

ADMIN

[07/05, 12:31] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER EIGHT

.

.

SAM

.

.

After hearing what husband has said last night made me wonder if I really know the real Benjamin, does he have any other hidden skeletons that might ruin our marriage in the future.

One thing I know is that no matter how bad the situation is I am never leaving my marriage.

I will only leave if he lays a hand on me, I'm not saying that I will stay around when he is cheating and stuff but we need to understand that marriage is not all about the good, rosey kinda stuff at times marriage does get tested and it's up to you both whether you want to throw in the towel or not.

Benjamin: Penny for your thoughts?

Me: How much do you have at the moment?

Benjamin: Millions love

Me:Mm mm

Benjamin:Talk to me Sam,tell me how you feel about this,tell me your fears,ask me anything just don't keep quiet

Me:Where can I start with the questions

Benjamin:You can ask me anything,remember we don't have much time cause the family will be visiting shortly and you know how punctual mom is

Me:We still need to talk about this Nikiwe issue

Benjamin:We will after we address the matter at hand first

Me:Okay here goes

.

.

Me:You know I love you right and you are my husband but to be honest it feels like I don't know who you are anymore,you have hidden the

most important thing about your life to me and now to come think about is it possible that you were only faking who you are?

Benjamin:Can I answer you?

Me:Yes

Benjamin:I love you too and you are my wife,I know what I did is wrong and it does not justify the way I handle it,I should have told you the moment we got serious the reason was because I was scared of losing you,which is why I kept quiet..you know me Sam because everything you know about me is real

Me:So when are you planning on quitting cause I believe you don't want to be a gangster for the rest of your life,remember Benjamin you are now a father not only to two children but now five in totally you need to be present in their lives and not only that you are my husband,I still need you around,I still want to grow old with you and how is that going to happen if there will

be times where you go on these secret missions of yours,Vilakazi you have all the money need my love.

My question for you is this,is money and power more important than your family?

Benjamin:I have been doing my last jobs and yes family is more important than that life,you have to know that once one enters that life is very hard from him to get out,but I am willing to start over for you guys

.

.

Me:Are our lives in danger?

Benjamin:Your lives are always in danger,which is why you have bodyguards following you,many of my enemies don't know that I am married because they will use you guys to get to me

Me:What's expected of me now that you are a gangster?

Benjamin:They know me as Theee Vilakazi most cruel and feared me,that includes Ty and John,as my women you are expected to be strong not weak and you never show your weakness in front of those who want to do evil against you.

Me:Is there any special training that I need to under go,I need to know how to defend my self but mostly I only want to know how to defend my kids Benjamin,you really need to get out of this mess before something happens.

So when can I start my training?

.

.

Benjamin:You need to heal Sam and the triplets need you

Me:We will come up with something,speaking of which have you find Mpho?

Benjamin:My guys are doing all they can



Me:So you telling me she is out,have you by maybe checked her parents house?

Benjamin:Why her parents house,there is no where that she could be there cause my guys have been keeping a eye on them and there is no sign of her

Me:You really can be slow at times,which parent will rat out their child,and you once told me that Mpho is very close with her father and I'm sure he knows where she is maybe he is the one hiding her

Benjamin:I don't want you to get involved

Me:(laughing)You don't want to lose the sweet innocent,loving Sam

Benjamin:No

Me:While baby daddy hubby I got involved the moment you made me your wife and when you knocked me up

Benjamin:No Babe I don't like this,just let me

handle it

Me:It's not like I'm asking to be involved in your dirty dealings,just consider me as your second eye and brain look love you can never trust anyone at the end of the day these man are making money,so you don't know whether they have the information or someone silenced them with some money,it's time for you to get back into the game it seems like you are slacking,they call you Thee Vilakazi show them what you are made of

Benjamin:(smiling)You are really are smart and to be honest love you are ruling out some possibilities that I haven't checked,so that you know you won't be using any gün and you won't be coming with me in my dealings let's get that clear

Me:You also need to know that I will only strike if and I mean if any one messes with my kids and my husband.I hope you don't have crazy ex-

girlfriends I really don't trust them after seeing how cray cray is I might as well prepare myself

Benjamin:So does that mean I am forgiven?

Me:Mmmmmm give me a good reason why I should forgive you,mmmmh maybe you should sing for me

Benjamin:(laughing)Haibo baby

Me:So what is it going to be?

Benjamin:Fine,you owe me a kiss and a cuddle

Me:(laughing)Deal

.

.

**BENJAMIN**

.

.

I am looking at this beautiful woman who is staring at me with her eyes full of love and I am

asking my self how did I get her,after dating all the women but still out of all of them she is the one who captured my heart.Her and the kids are the reason why I want to be a better man not for them but also for myself.Many women would have used this against me but my wife,my heart,covered my shame with love what kind of a woman is this

Sam:I'm still waiting Vilakazi(smiling)

Me:You are beautiful do you know that

Sam:(blushing)You tell me that all the time baby,I'm still waiting for my song

Me:Speechless-Micheal Jackson

Your love is magical

That's how I feel

But I have not the words to explain

Gone is the grace of expression of it's passion

But there are world's and ways

To tell you how I feel

But I am

Speechless,speechless

That's how you make me feel

For when I am with you I am far away

And nothing is for real

Speechless,speechless

Sam:Why do you love me?

Me:Celine Dion-Love doesn't ask why

Love doesn't ask why

Speaks from the heart

And never explains

Don't you know that love

Doesn't think twice

It can come all at once a whisper from a  
distance

So let's take what we have

And wrap it around us

Looooooooovvvvvvve doesn't you why

Speaks from the heart

Don't you know

Don't you know that lovvvve

Baaaaaaaaabbbbbbbby

Sam:(singing)

I want to be your baby

Won't you be my man?

I want to be your solider

When you to weak stand

I want be your baby

Be the end of the day

Forever by your side

Forever by your sight

Forever I stand

Sam:This is the reason why I won't walk out on  
us

Me:(laughing)You can be my baby,hayi kodwa  
baby awukwazi ukucula(you can't sing love)

Sam:Let's seal this off with a kiss and a cuddle

Me:(smiling)You read my mind,I love you

Sam:Me too

[07/05, 12:31] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER NINE

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

We were standing by the door watching Sam and Ben sing romantic songs to each other

Ndoni: You never once sang for me Gibsons, you should learn a thing or two from Benjamin

Me: I'm not Benjamin, you know love that I'm old school

Ndoni: Mmm is that so, maybe your old school will keep you warm at night

Me: What does that mean?

Ndoni: You will have to figure that out

Me: You starting with your crazy stuff

Ndoni: Did you just call me crazy Tyrese

Me: Me call you crazy, no baby there must be something wrong with your hearing?

Ndoni: Oh so now you are implying that I am deaf

Me: (laughing) I never said you are deaf, you are making things up



Ndoni:So now you are trying to tell me that I'm imagining things,entlek what are you trying to say Gibson

Me:(smiling)Nothing at all my love,so you want me to buy you a rose

Ndoni:Haysuka forget it

Me:Let's get in

Ndoni:Can't you wait a little longer,they are still kissing...ncooooh so sweet

Me:They are not going to stop until we get in

Ndoni:Why are you so grumpy today

Me:Says the women who....The women I love

Ndoni:Heeeeh you are testing me today ne Gibson

Me:Of cause not love,now come on we need to get in remember Gogo wants to see us today

Ndoni:I wonder what it's all about

Me:We will know once we get there

Ndoni:Can't wait to see the kittens and my beautiful sister

Me:I'm sure she can hear you

Ndoni:Ave ubhora Tyrese(you are so boring)

Me:And you love me nee

.

.

MPHO

.

.

Me:(panicking)Daddy he is going to find me

Dad:He won't my love now calm down

Mom:(shouting)What were you thinking

MPHO,why did you have to go to the Vilakazi household

Dad:You are suppose to be comforting your daughter Mophilo

Mom:(laughing)You must not be hearing yourself,can't you see that you are spoiling MPHO

Me:You never loved me mom

Mom:You know what I'm out of here call me when you both come to your senses

Dad:So you are leaving me just like that

Mom:What more do you want me to do Daniel,she almost killed Benjamin wife who happens to be pregnant,what if she has lost the babies what then?

Me:Than I will be happy,she will also know how it feels to lose your own kids

Mom:You need to be admitted in a mental institution,you know longer fit to be around people Mpho,you are a danger to not only to yourself but also those around you

.

.

With that been said she walked out leaving me with my father,at least I still have my dad in my corner

.

.

Me:We don't need her

Dad:I still need her,she is my wife Mpho the women who stood by me when no one believed in me,she is the one who was by my side when I was building this empire,maybe your mother is right baby you need to stop all of this,what did you gain by shoting Vilakazi wife?

You gained nothing pumpkin,Benjamin is still with his wife and he is out there looking for you and you do know that he is going to kill you.

I can't lose you pumpkin all because you want a man who no longer belongs to you

Me:So you also turning your back just like mom,you promised that you are going to help

me no matter what,why are you breaking your promise daddy

Dad:Promises are made to be broken

Mpho,there is nothing that I haven't done for you princess but now I see that my love has blinded me when knowing what is wrong and right and your mother is right we need to stop this

.

.

I WILL CONTINUE

[07/05, 12:31] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER NINE

.

.

CONTINUES

·  
·  
NDONI

·  
·  
Sam:(laughing)So tell me what were you guys  
aguring about

Me:Nothing,so when are am I meeting the  
kittens?

Sam:Are you really changing the subject right  
now

Me:You in cloud nine I see

Sam:Come and join me in bed,seems like  
someone needs a cuddle from big sis

Me:How am I going to fit,you can see that I'm  
like a hippo

Sam:Come and join me Ndoni don't worry about  
how small the bed is we are going to fit,now join

me I know you need a cuddle

I joined my sister in bed even though I knew Ben is going to complain,when it comes to Sam he wants her to be comfty and well taken care off.

Sam:So how is my pea doing down there

She was rubbing my tummy and pea is kicking like nobody's business

Sam:(laughing)Seems like someone missed Aunty

He sealed that off with a kick

Me:(laughing)You need to stop what you doing Sam,he can't stop kicking

Sam:Ooooh you are jealous just let me be,can't you see I'm bonding with my pea who is alone in the pond

Me:Thank goodness he is alone for I don't know how I would have taken care of them if there were many peas

Sam:Maybe next time you will carry twins

Me:Are you planning on having more kids after the kittens

Sam:(smiling)Both me and Ben want a big family so yeah maybe when the kittens are 5 or 6,then maybe we can try again...and you?

Me:I love being pregnant,I hope that Ty suffers from the morning sickness

Sam:I can't deal with a moody Ben so no on that thought

Me:You know Gogo wants to see me

Sam:Why,are you comfortable?

Me:(smiling)Yes,she didn't say so after seeing the kittens we heading straight there

.

.

TYRESE

.



.

Ben:What to talk about it?

Me:Let's first see the kittens than we will talk,so have you guys named them yet,still can't believe that the ladies allowed us to see them first

Ben:There are going to be crying and doing all those crazy things,you know how women are and we have names

We were entering into where the kittens were laying

Ben:How long are they going to be in the incubator?

Doctor:We will have to wait and see how fully developed their lungs are

Ben:Are they going to coming out?

Doctor:They will be exposed in a week or two,depending on their growth,remember the most important thing is that they fully grow

Ben:Can't wait to hold them

Doctor:You can talk to them,in that way they will be able to recognise your voice...I need to attend another patient if you need anything please call me,the nurses will be assisting you for the time being

Ben:Thank you

The doctor walked out leaving us with a nurses who were giving us those looks,you know those flirty looks

Me:They is no need to look at me I'm taken(splashing my ring finger)

Nurse 1:Who said I'm looking at you,I'm actually looking at this chocolate hunk he is more of my type I don't do yellow bones

Ben:I think what you are doing is very inappropriate,and I would like to get a male nurses instead of a women

Nurse 2:Don't worry yellow bone you more my

type,I think like them yellow

Me:You not being serious right now,can you help us with out kids

Nurse 1:Hang on a sec are you guys gay?

Ben:Yes do you have a problem

Nurse 2:Why are the yummy ones always taken

Me:It's life baby girl

Nurse 1:What a waste,I thought I was going to get lucky what a waste

.

.

The nurses showed us where the kittens were sleeping and I must say it was love at first sight,this moment reminded me when I had Travis and Ella.

Ben was crying,I think he was overwhelmed with the fact that they had pipes all over their bodies

Me:They are beautiful

Ben:They remind me of Ella and Travis,remember they were also premature babies

Me:Don't worry they are going to pull through

Ben:Who came first

Nurse 1:The boy,followed by the twin in the middle and lastly as you can see she is the smallest and the last one

Ben couldn't hold his tears

Me:If you are crying you are also going to make me cry you know

Ben:Just that I can't believe that they are here and they have made it after what they been through,and look at my tiny kitten

He was holding her tiny feet

Me:They are beautiful man

Ben:His name is Zenkosi Bensimthandile

Vilakazi,Nizibone Wame Vilakazi and my little fighter Izibele Warona Vilakazi

Me:(crying)Beautiful names

Nurse 1:They will get their name tags right away

Ben:Are the girls identical twins

Nurse 2:Yes,you will see that the small twin has a birth mark on her left foot where as her sister has it on her right foot

Me:Mirror twins

.

.

We spent so much time that we didn't even realise it was time for us to go.Izzy was crying and her father was pacing up and down asking the nurses what was wrong

Nurse 1:It's time for us to fetch mommy,she needs to feed them

Me:Seems like they already have you wrapped

around their finger

Ben:Can we be around well they have their first feed

Nurse 2:Yes sir let me go and fetch their mother

.

.

I AM TOOOOOO TIRED TO EDIT :z

[07/05, 12:31] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER TEN

.

.

Ndoni and Sam were trying to take a nap when the nurse walked in

Nurse:Before you take a nap you are needed in the ICU Ms Vilakazi

Sam:(panicking)Is everything fine with my babies,where are they,where is my husband

Nurse:(smiling)Must be the way I said it,well Ms Vilakazi I got a call from one of the nurses in the ICU ward and they told me that the triplets need to be feed

Sam:So nothing is wrong with them

Nurse:No mam,we better get going they must be getting cracky

Ndoni:What are the benefits of breast milk if you don't mind me asking

Nurse:We need her breast milk,for it is very beneficial in the life of an infant,as you know breast milk contains rich nuritents which are good for the baby.Now these nutrients help with the babies immunity system.

Sam:How are we going to feed them since they

are still in the incubator

Nurse:Through pipes,they have a tube which enters through their nose and into the opening of the stomach

Sam:So when will I start breastfeeding them?

Ndoni:Sisi you are telling me that you want to breastfeed three children

Sam:Breastfeeding creates a bond between baby and mother,and I want that with the kittens.

Ndoni:Can I be with her when feeding

Nurse:That is up to the mother and the father if they want any people

Sam:She will join,let's get going can't wait to see my kittens

.

.

They all left the private room and went to where



the triplets were being kept.

Ben was busy watching his son, while Ty was busy watching the girls. Both of them were so lost in the world of who knows where that they didn't hear their wives walk in. Each wife went to where her husband is standing

Ndoni: They are so small

Ty: And beautiful, this one pointing to the older sister twin is Nizibone Wame and the little kitten is Izibele Warona Vilakazi

Ndoni: Such beautiful names, I wonder what are we going to name our little pea

Ty: He is going to have three names that one which includes an English name

Ndoni: No child of mine is going to be oppressed Gibson

Ty: You also have an English name Ndoni

Ndoni: Which I don't use all the time, pea is having two names and that's finally

Ty:Than I guess we are naming our baby Pea Gibson

Ndoni:You are being crazy

Ty:It's the only name which we seem to agree on love

Nurse1:Let me start preparing the mother,please come this way mam

.

.

After feeding the kittens everyone went back to the room

Sam:They are so beautiful

Ndoni:You both know how to make beautiful kids

Ben:Can't wait to see Pea,then we will know who did the good job

Ty:I think we all know who is going to win this challenge

Ben:You do know that my kids take the cup

Sam:Can you guys please stop

Ndoni:We all have beautiful children,finish and klaar.

Now baby we need to leave

Sam:Already we were just bonding

Ndoni:Gogo called us a few hours ago,so you do know doesn't like waiting

Ben:Are you guys flying down to East London?

Ty:You really are put dated,Gogo and Bab'Dlamini are visiting his relatives here in Joburg

Sam:So where are my kids,who has my kids then?

[07/05, 12:32] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER TEN

.

.

## CONTINUES

.

.

Both Ndoni and her husband left on the way they got a call from Gogo

.

.

Gogo:Ndoni where are you?

Me:We already by the corner ma,tell us what is this all about

Gogo:Can't talk about it over the phone

Ndoni:You scaring me now,is everything okay

Gogo:You will know once you get here

With that being said she dropped the call

Ty:What was that all about

Ndoni:I really don't know but one thing is for sure,something tells me that something is about to go down

Ty:In everything you do please don't stress,think about the little life you are carrying

.

.

BACK AT THE HOSPITAL

.

.

Ben:We really have beautiful kittens my love

Sam:(smiling)Can't wait to hold them in my arms,so tell me where are the kids?

Ben:My mother went to fetch them,since Gogo asked her to come and fetch them

Sam:That's weird,she usually enjoys having her grandkids around

Ben:You need to relax everything is fine,now  
stop stressing

Sam:Mmmmh let's talk

Ben:(laughing)I think I know where this is going

Sam:How do you know without hearing what I  
have to say,so when is your mom coming over?

Ben:She will come later in the evening

Sam:And your family?

Ben:I don't want to talk about them

Sam:We need to talk about it Ben,regardless of  
what they do they are still your family

Ben:The only family I have is you,my mother  
and the kids the rest can go hang themselves

Sam:You don't mean that

Ben:Oh trust me I do

Sam:At the end of the day they are your family  
and you will have to forgive them sooner or  
later

Ben:I have forgiven them,but I don't want them near my family.The only time they will be able to visit or be near my kids is the moment when they apologise for their rude comments and attitude towards you,as long as I am still alive no one will disrespect my wife,if you can't handle it than the door is always open

Sam:Hawu Vilakazi

Ben:No Sam you are way to kind and many people take advantage of that,just because you don't talk doesn't mean that they should do as they please.You are my wife and mine alone,you needy understand that people in this world only care about themselves and baby you always cater for the other people leaving yourself behind.

I know you don't like tension,or bad blood but my love I am going to stand up for you when you are not able to.

Sam:Ncoooh baby,let's stop talking about this

cause I can see you are acting up Ave  
uneDrama

Ben:And you are ruining my mood by bringing  
up those useless....

Sam:Vilakazi

Ben:Sorry my love,we will talk about this some  
other time,right now let's just focus on the  
kittens and also our toddle and daughter

Sam:I love you,heehh baby let's gossip

Ben:Move over I need to hear this

He quickly joined Sam on the bed making sure  
he doesn't cause her any pain

Ben:You good,no pain?

Sam:Just little,and my wound is starting to itch

Ben:We should call the doctor,I don't want you  
getting an infection

Sam:Relax Vilakazi it's part of the healing  
process,so I was saying



Ben:Mamela mamawabo(I'm listen my love)

Sam:Did you see how the second nurse was flirting with you

Ben:Eishy baby you talking about that(laughing)it's a pity that she won't be getting any of this Vilakazi magic because it already has a owner,who happens to be my wife

Sam:Tell them baby that you are taken,make sure you wave that left finger in the air

.

.

Ndoni and Tyrese arrived and Gogo was waiting for them

Ty:Sorry we took long we were trying to find the street

Gogo:It's fine son,I'm just glad that you finally made it

Ndoni:So where is Bab'Dlamini and who's house

is this?

Gogo:He went out he will be coming back soon,that's the reason why you are here

Ndoni:Is everything okay Gogo

Gogo:You know that I love you

Ndoni:You scaring me now

Ty:Ndoni first hear what Gogo has to say then you can start panicking,right now I'm sure Pea is catching up on u necessary stress

Ndoni:So you telling me that I should stress after hearing what Gogo has to say

Gogo:Can you both stop,look Ndoni this is your mother's house and she wants to meet you

Ndoni:WHAT?

Ty:BREATH

[07/05, 19:44] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER TEN

.

.

## CONTINUES

.

.

Both Ndoni and her husband left on the way they got a call from Gogo

.

.

Gogo:Ndoni where are you?

Me:We already by the corner ma,tell us what is this all about

Gogo:Can't talk about it over the phone

Ndoni:You scaring me now,is everything okay

Gogo:You will know once you get here

With that being said she dropped the call

Ty:What was that all about

Ndoni:I really don't know but one thing is for sure,something tells me that something is about to go down

Ty:In everything you do please don't stress,think about the little life you are carrying

.

.

BACK AT THE HOSPITAL

.

.

Ben:We really have beautiful kittens my love

Sam:(smiling)Can't wait to hold them in my arms,so tell me where are the kids?

Ben:My mother went to fetch them,since Gogo asked her to come and fetch them

Sam:That's weird,she usually enjoys having her grandkids around

Ben:You need to relax everything is fine,now stop stressing

Sam:Mmmmh let's talk

Ben:(laughing)I think I know where this is going

Sam:How do you know without hearing what I have to say,so when is your mom coming over?

Ben:She will come later in the evening

Sam:And your family?

Ben:I don't want to talk about them

Sam:We need to talk about it Ben,regardless of what they do they are still your family

Ben:The only family I have is you,my mother and the kids the rest can go hang themselves

Sam:You don't mean that

Ben:Oh trust me I do

Sam:At the end of the day they are your family and you will have to forgive them sooner or later

Ben:I have forgiven them,but I don't want them near my family.The only time they will be able to visit or be near my kids is the moment when they apologise for their rude comments and attitude towards you,as long as I am still alive no one will disrespect my wife,if you can't handle it than the door is always open

Sam:Hawu Vilakazi

Ben:No Sam you are way to kind and many people take advantage of that,just because you don't talk doesn't mean that they should do as they please.You are my wife and mine alone,you needy understand that people in this world only care about themselves and baby you always cater for the other people leaving yourself behind.

I know you don't like tension,or bad blood but

my love I am going to stand up for you when you are not able to.

Sam:Ncoooh baby,let's stop talking about this cause I can see you are acting up Ave  
uneDrama

Ben:And you are ruining my mood by bringing up those useless....

Sam:Vilakazi

Ben:Sorry my love,we will talk about this some other time,right now let's just focus on the kittens and also our toddle and daughter

Sam:I love you,heehh baby let's gossip

Ben:Move over I need to hear this

He quickly joined Sam on the bed making sure he doesn't cause her any pain

Ben:You good,no pain?

Sam:Just little,and my wound is starting to itch

Ben:We should call the doctor,I don't want you

getting an infection

Sam:Relax Vilakazi it's part of the healing process,so I was saying

Ben:Mamela mamawabo(I'm listen my love)

Sam:Did you see how the second nurse was flirting with you

Ben:Eishy baby you talking about that(laughing)it's a pity that she won't be getting any of this Vilakazi magic because it already has a owner,who happens to be my wife

Sam:Tell them baby that you are taken,make sure you wave that left finger in the air

.

.

Ndoni and Tyrese arrived and Gogo was waiting for them

Ty:Sorry we took long we were trying to find the street



Gogo:It's fine son,I'm just glad that you finally made it

Ndoni:So where is Bab'Dlamini and who's house is this?

Gogo:He went out he will be coming back soon,that's the reason why you are here

Ndoni:Is everything okay Gogo

Gogo:You know that I love you

Ndoni:You scaring me now

Ty:Ndoni first hear what Gogo has to say then you can start panicking,right now I'm sure Pea is catching up on u necessary stress

Ndoni:So you telling me that I should stress after hearing what Gogo has to say

Gogo:Can you both stop,look Ndoni this is your mother's house and she wants to meet you

Ndoni:WHAT?

Ty:BREATH

[07/05, 19:44] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ty:I need you to calm down

Me:You asking me to calm down after what Gogo said,is this true tell me you are lying Gogo?

Ty:(shouting)No offence but couldn't you wait till she gives birth and this is the second time where you are putting Pea life in danger

Me:I thought we passed that

Ty:How can we get passed that if she keeps on

doing things like this,one would swear that she wants you to lose this pregnancy by causing you unnecessary stress

Me:TYRESE

Gogo:Once again I apologise for what I did to Ndoni

Me:No Gogo you did nothing wrong you were just being a parent that's all,and I believe Tyrese owes you an apology

Ty:I apologise for what I just said but

Me:That is not a sincere apology Tyrese

Gogo:Her mother couldn't wait she was going to find out sooner than later and I think it's best if she hears it from me

Ty:AND WHAT RIGHT DOES SHE HAVE BY CALLING THE SHOTS

Me:Calm down Tyrese I'm fine,where is she?

Ty:You don't have to do this Ndoni

Me:No I want to get this over and done with

Gogo:Let me call her

.

.

She quickly left and went to the other side which seemed to be a room,leaving me and my lovely husband in the living room

Ty:No offence but what your grandmother and mother are doing is totally uncool,it ain't cool

Me:And what you just said is uncool to,I told you to let go of this in my case it seems like you have not forgiven her

Ty:I have forgiven her but haven't forgotten what she has done,we almost lost our baby,you were crying thinking that pea didn't make it and now you want me to leave that all in the past

Me:What does forgiveness mean Tyrese

Ty:We not doing this here

Me:Let's just focus on why we are here,than the rest we will deal with it later

Ty:Ndoni you do know that the doctor said you need to rest and avoid stress

Me:Seems like stress is following me

Ty:I really don't like the way your grandmother and so called mother are doing things,my daughter is probably stressing due to all of this

Me:Pea is fine Ty

Ty:Has she moved yet

Me:She moved a few minutes ago

Ty:Let's just go and we will see them some other time

Me:And why is Gogo here,why did she lie about visiting a relative when she knew very well that her daughter is around

Ty:Beats me too

.

.

Gogo walked in with a women who appears to be in her late forties

She really looks good it's a pity that I don't have any memories about her

Gogo:Sorry we took long but your mother was busy taking a call

Ty:Mmm

Gogo:You don't have to be here Tyrese

Ty:If it was my choice I would have long gone,as you can see my better half wants to stay

You have changed Gogo you no longer the women I once knew,seems like you are angry and bitter at the same time

Gogo:That all changed when you made Ndoni pregnant,Nosizwe meet your daughter Ndoni and her husband Tyrese,call me when you need me

Me:You don't have to go Gogo

Nosizwe:Your husband is very rude,he needs to understand that this is my house

Ty:I will pretend like I didn't hear that,and this is my wife

Me:We are not here to talk about my husband,can you tell me why I am here

Ty:Why "we" are here

Nosizwe:The reason why I called you is because I would like us to talk

Me:Okay talk about what?

Aren't we talking now?

Nosizwe:Heeh can your husband leave us,this is a family matter

Ty:In case you didn't get the memo I have every right to be here since I paid lobola for her,and you see(pointing at my tummy)she is the reason why I don't want to leave both her and

mother need me

Me:My husband is not going anywhere

Nosizwe:Umh I would like to say sorry for what I did to you back then

Me:What exactly did you do cause I really don't remember

Gogo:NDONI

Me:No Gogo why should I sugarcoat things just for the sake of pleasing her

Nosizwe:I am your mother Ndoni,I gave birth to you

Just because you are married does not mean you are old enough to speak the way you are speaking with your elders

Me:Heeeeeeh the only mother I know is the women who is sitting right next to you,she is the only mother I have.

So why did you leave Nosizwe,what kind of a



mother leaves her child behind

Nosizwe:I am not going to tell you my reason but all you need to know is that I am sorry and that I want to be part of your life

Me:Hehe hehe hehe until you tell me why you left,you can kiss that relationship goodbye cause it will never happen

Tyrese let's go I think we done here

Ty:Before we leave I need to say this,since you didn't explain yourself today you will have to wait till she gives birth...after she gives birth the next three months are crucial for she will bonding so you will see her after bonding

Nosizwe:Why are you controlling my daughter,why don't you get married to a person your age and leave my daughter alone,ma why did you allow this to happen

Ty:(laughing)This old fella needs to get his young wife home

.

.

We both left leaving Gogo and her daughter behind

Me:Heeeeeeh

Ty:Should we go to the doctor

Me:No I'm fine maybe you should call the doctor in,maybe he can house visit I really don't want to get admitted

Ty:Okay,we are going to get through this together okay..Every step of the way this old man will be standing by your side

Me:Thanks love,let me lie down wake me up when we get home,Pea is craving some spur ribs

Ty:Your wish is my command,and Ndoni try not to stress please

Me:Okay

.

.

NOSIZWE

.

.

Me:She is never going to forgive me ma

Gogo:Tell her the truth Sizwe

Me:You have to help me win her back mom,I need her in my life my other kids need to know their older sister

Gogo:You are only thinking about yourself  
Sizwe what about Ndoni,you expect to her to take you back after what you did

Me:You enjoying this..my daughter needs to come back to me

[07/05, 19:45] W: S2(CROP TOP)

.

.

## CHAPTER TWELVE

.

.

### BONNIE

.

.

Nomhle: Stop over thinking it and call the guy

Me: Maybe we should just let this go, I have a feeling that nothing good is going to come out of this

Nomhle: Look Bonnie I know you are scared and stuff, don't worry I have this all under control

Me: What if he finds out it's me than what, he won't hesitate to kill me Nomhle

Nomhle: He won't kill you Bonnie, after kidnapping the kids we are going to go far away from here, they won't even know where to find

us

Me:Okay let me do this

Nomhle:Remember just relax,don't panick or he will know that you are up to something

.

.

I called Benjamin and he answered after the fourth ring

Ben:(sleepy voice>Hello?

Me:Umh oh my bad,are you sleeping?

Ben:Duh,whom am I speaking too?

Me:Don't tell me you don't recognise my voice,it's me Bonnie

Ben:(laughing)Heeey man I thought you were going to come over since the others have already come to see the kittens

Me:I was busy but don't worry I will come over maybe later in the dat,so tell me how are they?

Ben:They are so beautiful Bonnie you need to come and see them, but later in the day cause right now they are still taking a nap and also my wife is resting

Me:Isn't Sam going to mind

Ben:No she knows you are my friend

Me:Did you tell her that we were once more than friends

Ben:I don't think she needs to hear about that and what happened between us was a mistake you know that right,why are you bringing this thing up I thought we were pass that

Bonnie:Okay if you say so,I will come around 1pm in the afternoon

Ben:Cool let me know when you arrive

Me:Sharp

Ben:Alright

.

.

Nomhle:So what did he say?

Me:That I can come over and see the triplets

Nomhle:He trusts you,okay all you need to do is ask as many questions as you can concerning the triplets condition

Me:Okay,let me go and freshen up

Nomhle:Bonnie?

Me:Yes

Nomhle:Don't worry I won't let anything happen to you

Me:Thanks sis

.

.

**BENJAMIN**

.

.

Sam:Who was calling?

Me:It's Bonnie love she will be coming over to see the kittens

Sam:Don't you think it's too soon for them to be seen by other people,I have no problem when it comes to John,Shanell,Tyrese and Ndoni but as for Bonnie she is a stranger and I don't want many people seeing the kittens

Me:But love I already told her that she could come over

Sam:Than that's your problem,your friend won't be seeing the kittens

Me:She is going to be accompanied by me love

Sam:You really want her to see them,just so you know I'm not happy with the whole idea and don't bother letting me know when she arrives

Me:Haibo Sam what's with the sudden change of mood

Sam:Andithi I'm telling you that I don't want



anyone near my kids

Me:When you act like this usually means that you had a bad dream or you have a bad feeling about something so tell me what's wrong

Sam:It's nothing can we just leave it

Me:How am I going to help if you don't tell me what's wrong

.

.

Sam:I have this feeling that something bad is going to happen,especially when it comes to the kittens...All I see is blood Ben so much blood but I can't see where the blood is coming from

Me:Did you have another vision?

Sam:(looking down)Yes...and the most frustrating thing is that I don't know where the blood is coming from,everything is just dark Ben

Me:Maybe you are feeling exhausted baby

Sam:This is not due to exhaustion

Ben,something is going to happen and all of this includes the kittens...oooooh so now you saying that I'm imagining things

Me:Of cause not baby but tell me how long have you had these visions

Sam:For as long as I remember,there are times when I see things about those whom I love but mostly they are about people whom I don't know

Me:What do you do when you have these visions

Sam:I pray and ask God for guidance

Me:Then we should do exactly that

Sam:You don't think I'm crazy

Me:Of cause not baby,you are unique just the way you are...now next time I want you to tell me what's wrong,there is no need for you to

snap at me

Sam:I'm sorry I didn't mean it

Me:I know you are just being a mother,so let us pray

.

.

Sam:Heavenly Father,we would firstly like to say thank you for the safe delivery of our triplets,there are many women who give birth to multiples they either lose one baby or both but in our case you have saved our babies and for that we are very grateful.We are also grateful for protecting me during my surgery I wouldn't have made it if your hand was not upon me

Me:And Lord we would like to say thank you for everything you have done for us.Lord we come before you for my wife had a vision and it's troubling her spirit God I pray that if it is a warning from you God let us hear your voice

and if not

Sam:We cancel any plot made by the devil against our family,with the Blood of Jesus we cancel any plan of the devil against our marriage,our kid's and also our families and friends

Me:Direct our paths and let's us live according to your way,we can not do that with our own power,or strength but with your grace we are able

Sam:Bless those who curse us

Me:Bless those who bless us too God

Sam:Comfort those who are mourning,be with those who are unable to speak for themselves

Me:And we also place those who are in hospitals,prisons and many situations which are way different from ours,be with them Lord

Sam:I would also would like to say thank you for blessing me with this wonderful husband,I

wouldn't be standing here with this man if it was not for you Lord,I pray for my husband that you protect him from all the evil of this world.Teach me to be a wife who I will besubmissive to her husband for he is the head of the house and let me respect him God and lastly give me the grace to love him

Me:And I pray for my wife,thank you for protecting her Lord,no amount of words can describe how grateful I am towards you for blessing me with Samthandie....I pray for our marriage protect and guide this union.

Sam:In the Name of Jesus

we pray

Me:Amen

[07/05, 19:51] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER TWELVE

.

.

## CONTINUES

.

.

## KOURTNEY

.

.

We have just arrived and my husband has some phone call to attend to,the twins were already taking their nap for the day,and Pea on the other hand was kicking like nobody business

Me:Mmmm funny how you are so excited today,you usually lazy just like someone I know(rubbing her tummy)

Ty:Let my little pea  
play

Me:I thought you were taking a call

Ty:What's more important to me right now is  
your well being,the caller will call me some  
other time

Me:Isn't that bad for business

Ty:Let me tell you something,the moment we  
got married I made a vow to myself that no  
matter what might happen business wise,you  
and the kids come first including my brother's  
of course and business comes second  
in my life

Me:Mmmm,let me take a nap

Ty:Ndoni

Me:Gibson

Ty:(smiling)Talk to me my love,tell me how you  
feeling

Me:To be honest I don't even know how I am feeling right now

Ty:Just say it like it is

Me:I somehow feel batrayed by Gogo,like how can she hide something like this,I know that she is her daughter and they is nothing that she wouldn't do for her,but in all of this did she really consider my feelings

It's seems like she wants to please her so called daughter which is fine but what about me,as much as I don't want to sat this but what you said earlier really has made me wonder,has Gogo really changed cause ever since me and Sam got married we are no longer close with her,in some instances it feels like she has distanced herself from us and that really hurts me Tyrese,she is the only mother I know but now it feels like Sam's mother in law is more of a mother than Gogo

Ty:She will come around babe



Me:When cause right now I need her more than anything,our relationship is not going to be the same again since her daughter has arrived,the sooner I get that the better

Ty:Your family may turn their backs on you,but know that I Tyrese Gibson will always be on your side till death do us apart

Me:Thanks love,now go and answer that ringing phone

Ty:Promise when I'm done I am going to spend the rest of the day with you and my little pea

Me:When you coming up make sure you bring a tub of ice cream

Ty:And movies

Me:I will call Sam so far

Ty:Shout if you need anything,now get some rest

Me:Yes daddy

.

.

Ty:Ndoni?

He always has this way of pronouncing my name that always sends chills through my body

Me:Yes love

Ty:Do you know the first time I saw you I had butterflies

Me:(laughing)No you lie

Ty:No really baby

Me:I thought that girls are the only one's who experience such things

Ty:Well it happened to me my love

Me:(laughing)

Ty:It always brings me joy to see you smile,even when you had a bad day you always know how to show that beautiful smile of yours

.

.

Ty:Ndoni yam,Pinkie wam(smiling)wifey  
wam,mama wabantwana bam

Me:(smiling)Buthi bae,mdala wam(old man)

Ty:(laughing)I'm not that old

Me:Sundiphazamisa alk(don't disturb me)myeni  
wam,Tata wabantwana bam,caremel yam

Ty:(laughing)Baby you making your old man  
blush right now

Me:That means I'm doing a great job mos

.

.

Ty:I may not be the most romantic guy,I may  
not sing you songs or take you out on dates but  
all you got to know is this,ever since you came  
into my life you have been nothing but a  
blessing,every moment with you feels

special....you are my heart keeper and there is no one else like you,many may hate our relationship all because I'm older than you but baby when I'm with you,you make me feel like I'm in my twenties again.I may not be able to express my love by words...I love you Ndoni yam

If I may quote "Blessed is man who finds a wife"

Indeed I am blessed to have you as my wife,there is no one else whom I may rather spend my life with other than you Ndoni,I know that I won't be able to take away the void that you are feeling at the moment but all shall pass my love

When I first saw you

I said oh my

That's my dream

That's my dream

(singing)

I love you Ms Me,more than yesterday,now your better half needs to leave

Me:(blushing)You leaving me with all these sweet words,so tell me who gave you the tutorials

Ty:(laughing)I'm not that bad

Me:(laughing)I'm sure you paid someone to write you those lies

Ty:I thought you were going to rate me on my singing

Me:Your voice is so bad I didn't even hear what you were singing cause I was paying so much attention to the cracking sound of the windows

Ty:(laughing)Mind telling me why your cheeks are pink

Me:High blood pressure baby

Ty: Don't blame it on Pea,you know I have a good voice,it all got you feeling some kind of a way

Me:(laughing)Just leave already

Ty:I love you

Me:We love you too baby and thank you

Ty:My pleasure love

.

.

He walked out leaving me thinking about the sweet words he just spoke a few minutes ago,even though my relationship with Gogo may be rocky at the moment I am just glad that I have my husband beside me

.

.

T000000 LAZY T000000 EDDDDIIIIIIIT

[07/05, 19:54] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

.

.

## NOSIZWE

.

.

Chad:So mom when are we meeting our sister

Charles:Yes mom you promised that we are going to see her

Drew:Mom why didn't we know about her until grandma mentioned her

Me:Eat up kids,you are going to see your sister very soon

Drew:Does she even know that we exist,does she want to be in our lives...I really would like to meet her Gogo says she is very beautiful she looks like a princess

Me:(smiling)She does baby,who wouldn't want

you guys

Chad:Well dad doesn't want us anymore

Charles:Why does dad hate us so much

Carl:That's because mom lied about the fact she has another daughter

Me:That is no way to speak young lady,kids go to your rooms,mommy would like to have a chat with your sister

Drew:Mommy you in big trouble with Granny

Carl:Go to your room baby

Drew:Are you going to come and play tea party with me?

Carl:Yes baby that's if you promise to behaivour

Drew:Okay...Mommy I love you

Carl:And I love you too princess

Drew:Charles,Chad did you hear that mommy says I'm a princess



.

.

Me:(banging the table)WHAT IS WRONG WITH YOU CARL

Carl:I really don't see why you should be shouting cause it's just you and me

Me:That is no way to speak with your mother

Carl:No mother in their right mind will leave their daughter behind all because of a good life,have you ever wondered how Kourtney felt to grow up without a mother,she needed a mothers love but all you cared about was yourself...let me ask you something have you ever sent money for her,to atleast help Gogo with her expenses....No you did none of that and now you have the guts to want to get back into her life

Me:YOU HAVE NO IDEA WHAT YOU ARE TALKING ABOUT,YOU HAVE NO RIGHT TO

JUDGE ME...FOR SOMEONE WHO GOT  
PREGNANT AT 15

Carl:WoW so we are going to talk about that  
right now.

Mom you of all people asked me to have an  
abortion,if it was not for dad than Drew wouldn't  
be here and for that I am so grateful to dad  
about that,atleast my daughter is growing in  
front of me what about you?

I really wonder at times what did dad see in you  
cause you are nothing but a witch

Me:SINCE YOU ARE CALLING ME A WITCH  
WHY DON'T YOU PACK YOUR CLOTHES  
TOGETHER WITH THAT THING OF YOURS AND  
LEAVE MY HOUSE

Carl:Where will we go,we know no one here

Me:YOUNG LADY I REALLY DON'T CARE JUST  
PACK YOUR RAGS AND GO

Carl:You don't deserve to be called a

mother,Drew and I are going to be better without you I just feel sorry for Chad and Charles I hope dad takes them away from you....and as for Kourtney I hope she sees you for what you are...sies nothing but an old gold digger

.

.

With that being said she walked out leaving me in the kitchen fanning myself

Chad:Mom is Carl leaving us

Charles:Where is she going to stay,she knows no one here mom,please think about Drew

Me:If you both don't have anything to say why don't you both follow your sister than and leave me alone,in fact you are all a burden to me,every since I got pregnant with you guys my life has stop...you are the reason why I know longer have fun....JUST DO ME A FAVOUR AND

GET THE HELL OUT OF MY HOUSE,I AM GIVING  
YOU AN HOUR WHEN I COME BACK I WANT  
YOU ALL GONE

[07/05, 20:01] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

CARL

.

.

You guys probably know me my name is Carl  
Kendall Viga and I am 19 years old,as you know

my mother is Nosizwe she was married to my dad until he found out about my older sister Kourtney...I really don't know much about her but I would like to get to know her as my older sister.My father decided to file a divorce which lead to mom having sole custody over us,which is why we came back to South Africa,it's my first time being here but due to circumstances we needed to adapt to the new environment.

My father is doing all he can to get us back,but my mother has milked him dry all because of child support.

In England I was doing my second year in Medicine but due to all of this conflict I ended up failing my second year.

But now I am hoping in pursing my studies here in South Africa to make a better living for my daughter,father and brothers

You guys are probably wondering why I got pregnant at a young age,well Drew is a child of

a rape I don't like referring to her like that cause to me regardless of how she was conceived she is still my princess and having her has nothing but a blessing and I'm grateful that I didn't go through with the abortion....There is so much to tell you about myself but right now is not the time,and Drew father is not in the picture he doesn't know anything about her

.

.

I was packing our clothes when my younger brothers walked in Chad who is 10 and Charles who is 12,they were crying and I knew that mom had another trantum...I'm used to her crazy attitude I try by all means to prevent them from seeing her behaviour

Chad:She wants us gone Sissy

Charles:Why does mom and dad hate us so much

Me:Dad does not hate you guys he really loves you both and he is trying his best to get you back

Chad:Mom wants us gone,where are we going to go sissy

Me:Maybe we should try and call Kourtney maybe she will help us..The bad thing is that I don't have her number

Chad:Mom left her phone behind

Me:Hurry go and fetch it

.

.

Chad came with mom phone and luckily she had Kourtney number

Chad:Quickly Dial her number before mom gets home

I was thinking about how she is going to react about this but it's better to try than not to try at

all

.

.

I dialed her number and it rang, until a beautiful voice answered.

Hearing her voice for the first time made me feel some sort of love, kindness and peace

Ndoni: Ndoni speaking hello?

Me: Sorry to bother you... um you speaking to Carl... We need your help sister Kourtney

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

I was watching some movie when my phone started ringing, an unknown number appeared



on my screen...at first I thought it was one of those prank calls but something me made me to pick up the call

A young voice came through and she started calling me sister Ndoni, anyone would have heard the desperation in her voice, that I was their only help....at first I despised them for they had a mothers love but when she started telling me the story my heart ached for my siblings, I may have not known them but there is a reason why God has brought them back into my life...at the end of the day they are all innocent in all of this the one who is at fault is my mother

.

.

Me:Carl right

Carl:Yes sister Ndoni

Me:Listen to me baby I want you guys to pack everything that belongs to you guys...If it is

possible leave the other stuff we will buy you new things once you get here,what I want you to do is to take every important document that belongs to,your passports,birth certificates and the rest we will talk about it once you get here.

I will be sending my driver to come and pick you guys up

Carl:(sniffing)Thank you

Me: Don't worry baby everything is going to be fine okay,now drop the call I will call you back...The driver will be arriving very soon

Carl:Okay thank

.

.

With that being said she dropped the call

I went downstairs to my husband study,where I found him talking with Biza

Ty:Is everything okay?

Me:No no no everything is wrong but right now I need someone to go and fetch my siblings at Nosizwe house as in now

Ty:Babe what's going on?

Me:Biza can you kindly be the driver please

Biza:Anything for you boss lady just give me the direction

Me:Follow me

Ty:Mamakhe

Me:Tatakhe,we will talk vha

[07/05, 20:03] W: S2

.

.

FOURTEEN

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ty:So tell me what's going on why are you all tense all of a sudden

Me:You not going to believe who just called me a few minutes ago

Ty:Can you tell me already you starting to worry me

Me:I just got off the call with my younger sister Carl,she has told me that Nosizwe has kicked them out,they have no where else to go

Ty:Your mother really has some issues Ndoni,are they sure that there is nothing going on in that brain of hers one would swear she is smoking

Me:So I was meaning to ask can't they come and stay with us for the time being,until we figure out what the next step will be

Ty:Where is the father?

Me:She didn't say,we will have to ask them when they arrive

Ty:I have nothing against the kids as long as they are going to respect you,I don't want them treating you badly or else they will have a street as a home

Me:You wouldn't do that to anyone

Ty:I would especially someone who messes with my love ones...

Me:Can't believe we are going to have new people in the house

.

.

Ty:I'm proud of you baby do you know that

Me:And why so?

Ty:I love the way you are handling this situation,you are taking care of your siblings even though you are going to meet them for the

first time,and for that I admire you baby

Me:What's up with you today,you really good with words

Ty:See the reason why I don't become romantic with you,you always say the opposite of what I am saying can't you for once be in the zone

Me:You want me to say my Kentucky bone

Ty:(laughing)That's more like it,speaking of which have prepared the guest rooms

Me:I was thinking maybe you can help with that

Ty:We should wake Ella and Travis

Me:Leave my kids alone Tyrese,and how are they going to help me,they can't even change beds yet

Ty:We are going to teach them

.

.

Me:Aren't they going to mind that the house is

going to be full of new faces

Ty:I think they are going to adapt,and they are very excited about meeting Pea so I'm sure they are going to be fine

Me:You know how jealous Ella can be when it comes to you,she doesn't like sharing

Ty:Same applies with you and Travis,he even goes as making sure that I stay far away from you

Me:Than how are we going to this

Ty:We will figure it out as time goes by

Me:Let's get started Mr Gibson

Ty:After you Ms Gibsons

.

.

SAM

.

.

Me:Baby when are you going to forgive your family

Ben:I don't want to talk about this Sam especially not now

Me:We need to address this,look baby I know that your family can be a pain in the butt but you need to understand that they want what's best for you

Ben:See this is the reason why they always teach advantage of you Sam,you are to kind

Me:And you are sometimes unfair

Ben:Okay baby what do you suggest

Me:First of all apologise to your elders even though they say hurtful things at times but you are young and they are old and they deserve the respect

Ben:Respect is a one way street Sam,you can't do me wrong and expect me to smile,respect is



earned Sam if you speak rudely with me I will do the same

Me: Sometimes you need to be the bigger person, it's not about who's right and who's wrongs what's important is that you become the bigger person than the other, like you said respect is earned how is someone going to see themselves at fault if you for one at the very same way as they are acting, there is saying which says

"The wise walk away, while fools quarrel"

So baby don't be like the fool but rather be like a wise man, who just walks away

You know walking away does the talking for you

Ben: I hear you love, but that will only happen once they ask for forgiveness from you

Me: And what if it takes them 10 or 15 years for them to realise that they were wrong, life is so much better when we forgive and move on.

.

.

Me: Let me tell you something about forgiveness, forgiveness is not about the one who did you wrong to be the first one to ask for forgiveness but rather it's all about you as a person to be the first one who takes the step of forgiving someone who has done you wrong, imagine if I had not forgiven my aunt till this day I would be dragging the negative energy which will result in me being bitter, even till this day she hasn't asked for forgiveness even though she treated me so badly....my point is that you do not forgive only because you want to prove a point that so and so are wrong, you forgive because it's healing to your heart so that you do not carry any bitterness or hatred in your heart.

.

.

Me: Sometimes some things are not worth it, hating family is not worth it... yes there are times when you are going to have disagreements but what's important is that you address those matters and deal with them.... For starters you can ask to speak with your father tell him that you do not like this and that, tell him what hurts you the most and I promise you baby he will listen, and as for your aunts sit down with them also talk with them tell them you don't like point A and B.

.

.

Me: Maybe then you guys are going to understand each other

Ben: Am still angry about how they treated you though

Me: I have forgiven them and I think it's best if you do the same

Ben:What you asking is really hard Sam

Me:It's not going to happen over night but can you at least try

Ben:Only because you asked me

Me:Ben

Ben:Yes love

Me:You also need to forgive Nikiwe,I'm sure what she did was an innocent mistake

Ben:Not everyone has a good heart like you Sam,Nikiwe knew exactly what she was doing...I really don't care what her explanation has to be cause right now I don't want to hear anything about it

Me:God was and is able to forgive your sins but why can't you do the same with Nikiwe

Ben:I forgive Nikiwe but I don't want her anywhere near my children and that is final...can we talk about something else

Me:You can't keep running away from this

Ben:We have talked about it

Me:Mmmmh fine,so when is Bonnie arriving

Ben:Around 3pm,and I thought about what you said and she is not going to see them

Me:Mmmm that's good

.

.

I'M TIRED WILL CONTINUE TOMORROW

[07/05, 20:08] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

.

.

CARL

.

.

Drew: Mommy why are you crying

Me: (crying) I'm just happy baby that's all, boy's quickly pack your bags we are leaving soon

Chad: Are we going to live with sister Ndoni

Me: I don't know how the setting is going to be at the moment but for now she has allowed us to come over. Now listen I want you guys to be on your best behaviour, she is our sister but you need to understand that she is a wife and a mother, so you will have to understand

Charles: What about mommy?

Chad: What about her, you heard what she said she doesn't want us around and it's best if we forget about mom

Charles: And what about dad, dad loves us right Carl

Me:Of cause he does baby and when we get to sister Ndoni house we will ask her for help

Drew:Mommy are we leaving grandma behind,is she not coming with us

Me:I'm afraid not baby,now guys go and pack your stuff we need to get moving

Charles:Chad let's go to our room and start packing,we don't want to keep the driver waiting

Me:Good idea

.

.

The boys walked out and went to their room,Drew was following me around,helping me fold the clothes,even though what she did wasn't right but my baby was helping me

Me:I love you baby,you are the best thing that has ever happened to me,and I will try by all means to be the best mother I can be

She was now playing with her favourite stuffed animal which is an elephant, she got it from my dad

Me: Baby come let's go to granny room I want to look for some things I don't want to leave you behind

Drew: Mommy your phone is ringing

Me: Bring it baby, careful

.

.

She gave me the phone and it was sister Ndoni calling

Me: Hello sister Ndoni

Ndoni: (laughing) Please call me Ndoni or sis

Me: Yes sister Ndon, I mean yes sis

Ndoni: (laughing) Much better, so how far are you guys with the packing the driver says he is three streets away from there



Me:We almost done I'm just looking for our documents now

Ndoni:Okay,he will come in and help you with the bags so long

Me:Okay sis

Drew:Mommy mommy I want some ice cream

Me:Not now Drew,what did I say about disturbing mommy well on the phone

Drew:Sorry mommy

Ndoni:Let me know when he has arrived,and tell that princess I can't wait to meet her

Me:(smiling)Will do,bye

Ndoni:Bye love see you guys very soon

.

.

NOMPILO

.

.

Bab'Dlamini:I don't know whether you are thinking with your heart or your mind,but mna mfazi(wife)I'm not getting involved

Me:So you are telling me that you are not going to help me in bringing together my daughter and granddaughter together

Bab'Dlamini:I think it's best if you don't get involved in this Nompilo,don't you think that Ndoni will wonder if you are taking sides,when was the last time you spoke to our daughters?

Me:A few weeks ago

Bab'Dlamini:No offence but I believe that Nosizwe has a motive,she can't just budge in Ndoni life like that

Me:Oh so now you are saying that my daughter has double motives,why can't you see that she wants to have a relationship with her daughter

Bab'Dlamini:Haha haha a relationship,a

relationship with the same daughter whom she left behind, she didn't even look back on her so called daughter now all of sudden she wants to be back in Ndoni life, that won't happen, over my dead body

Me: NDONI AND SAMTHANDIE ARE NOT EVEN YOUR REAL DAUGHTERS

Bab'Dlamini: They don't have to be my biological children in order for them to be my children, I don't care what you say but Sam and Ndoni are my children whether you and that gold digging daughter like or not.

The fact still remains is this

"No one is going to play with my children feelings and that includes you Nompilo"

Now if you can excuse me I have calls to make

.

.

He walked out and before he exited the door he

called out

Bab'Dlamini:My wife

Me:Baba

Bab'Dlamini:Before I forget let that be the last time you raise your voice at me,you never once heard me raising my voice at you,so I think you should do the same.

I love you don't forget that

Bab'Dlamini:And tell that daughter of yours to come and see me,you won't be taking any decisions involving Ndoni and Sam without my consent...Enjoy your day

.

.

.

SOMETHING SHORT NYANA

.

.

GOODMORNING LOVIES HOPE YOU GUYS  
SLEPT WELL...I JUST WANT TO SAY YOU ARE  
BEAUTIFUL,AND YOU ARE LOVED BY GOD

.

.

WISHING YOU GUYS A VERY PRODUCTIVE  
DAY,SEE YOU LATER IN THE EVENING



[07/05, 20:12] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

The twins were now awake and Travis was coming down with a flu, which made him cranky and clinging

Ella: What's wrong with berries mommy

Me: I think he is coming down with a flu

Ella: Then he has to go the doctor

Me: He will get a needle

Travis: I don't want to get a needle mommy

Me: How are you going to get better if you don't want a needle Travis

Travis: Mommy (crying)

Ella:Let me go and get daddy

Me:(laughing)You enjoying this aren't you Ella

Ella:(laughing)Of cause not mommy I just want berries the get better thats all

Me:Before you go to your father I want to tell you something,my brothers and sister will be arriving today,and a little birdie told me she has a little girl who likes playing dress-up

Ella:(screaming)Can she sleep with me

Me:So you don't mind having new people in the house

Ella:No

Travis:Mommy I want...mommy

Ella:Let me go to daddy

Me:Knock before you enter the door,he might be busy and tell him that he needs to make an appointment for Travis

Ella:Okay mommy

.

.

She ran out of the kitchen leaving me and my son who was clinging on my dress

Me:Travis go lie down on the couch

Travis:No mommy I want to be here with you

Me:You do know that I won't be able to pick you up

He started crying

Me:Let's go and cuddle in the lounge while we are waiting for daddy and Ella to come back

Travis:I don't want to go to the doctor mommy

Me:How are you going to get better Travis,can you see that you have a blocked nose and you sneezing non-stop

Travis:I don't like needles

Me:I am going to be with you all the way



.

.

CARL

.

.

We were now done with the packing when a car stopped by the drive way

Drew:Does granny have a new car mommy

Me:No sweety that must be our driver

Chad:He has a nice car does it belong to sister Ndoni

Me:I'm not sure

Charles:Let's go and welcome him in

Me:No no no let's first wait for him to knock

.

.

The guy finally opened his car door and stopped

out,I couldn't see how he looked but I heard when he closed the door.

After some time he finally knocked

Chad:Can I answer the door?

Me:No since you were misbehaving a few minutes ago,drew will answer the door

Chad:She can't open the door

Me:Charles will help her,now Drew and Charles go and answer the door and let our guest in,Chad go and make some juice,take the cookies which are top counter

Chad:Yes ma'am

.

.

AT THE DOOR

.

.

BIZA

.

.

I was now standing on the door since Boss Lady has asked me to come and pick up her siblings

I didn't know that she had other siblings other than Sam

I knocked and the door was opened by a little girl who was standing next to a young boy,they are both adorable

Me:Wow you guys look beautiful

Little girl:Hello my name is Drew and this is my uncle Charles,he looks young to be my uncle but mommy...

Charles:Drew you should allow him to enter

Me:(laughing)No it's fine

Drew:Please come in mom is waiting for you in

the dining room

.

.

As we are standing by the door a beautiful yet young woman appeared from the other side

Drew: Mommy we were going to come you know

Women: Excuse my daughter she can be a real talker, please come in

Charles: That's what I have been telling Drew

Women: My name is Carl you must be

Me: You so beautiful

Carl: Excuse me?

Me: I mean my name is Banele

Drew: No he said you look beautiful mommy

Me: No I did not

Drew: Are you saying I'm lying

Charles: Oh boy you never going to hear the end

of it

.

.

NOT EDITED

[07/05, 20:17] W: S2

.

.

SIXTEEN

.

.

BIZA

.

.

I was just staring at her not knowing what to do,all I could do was to watch her beautiful lips move but no sound came out Drew brought me back on earth

Drew:Uncle you know mommy says it's rude to be quiet when someone is talking to you,at least you should answer with a yes or a no

Carl:You miss thing are getting to big for your shoes now I want you to apologise to uncle

Drew:But mommy

Carl:You don't want to be in a naughty corner now do we

Drew:I'm sorry for what I said

Me:It's okay princess

Carl:I think it's best if we start packing before my mother get's back,guys bring the cool drink and cookies

Me:Cookies will do

.

.

After packing we were now walking to my car

Drew:Mommy where are we going

Carl:We are going to our new home

Drew:Are we going to see papa(that's how she called dad)

Carl:No baby,I will try and make sure that we get papa number so that you can speak with him

Drew:I miss him

Carl:We all miss him,now I want you to be a very good girl and mommy proud,same applies to you boys

Chad:I'm going to be on my best behaviour

Charles:Can you please ask sis Ndoni to help us get in touched with papa

Carl:We will have to wait and see

Me:Have you packed everything you will need?

Chad:Yes

Me:Let's get going than

Drew:Mommy can I have some ice-cream

Carl:Maybe some other time Drew

Me:If you guys don't mind we can pass KFC for some ice-cream

Carl:No it's fine

Me:If really don't mind

Chad:Please Carl

Carl:Are you sure?

Me:I would've offered if I wasn't sure

Carl:Thank you I promise to pay you back

Me:So KFC it is

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

I really don't mind having my wife siblings around as long as they behaviour,I only have a



problem with her mother I wonder what's her story is all about.

I took Travis to the doctor and the doctor confirmed that he was coming down with a flu and it's possible that his sister will also have the flu.

Me:So how are you feeling buddy

Travis:I just miss mom and Ella

Me:Aren't you enjoying some time with daddy

Travis:I do but I want mommy to cuddle me

.

.

I KNOW IT'S SHORT BUT I NEEDED A BREAK  
SEE YOU GUYS TOMORROW...SORRYINI FOR  
NOT POSTING

[07/05, 20:20] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

.

.

## CONTINUES

.

.

## KOURTNEY

.

.

I was waiting for my husband and son to arrive when I heard a car pull over in the drive way

.

.

Ella ran to the door and came back shouting

Ella:Mommy that's not daddies car

Me:Probably Uncle Bee

Ella:I hope he brought me some ice-cream

Me:We do have some ice-cream in the fridge

Ella:I know but I want the one which Uncle Bee always buy me,mommy he is coming out with his wife and kids

Me:(laughing)And why are you saying that?

Ella:Both you and dad have me and berries,Uncle Ben also is married to Aunt Sam and he has Thando,Mila and now the kittens and then there is Uncle John who is married to Aunt Shanell and they have kids

Me:Okay baby that's enough now,remember I told you earlier that my siblings will be arriving today

Ella:Yes

Me:Those are my siblings,and Uncle Bee is not married yet

Ella:I really wanted to be a flower girl

Me:But you were a flower girl in my wedding

Ella:Mommy I just want to be a flower girl that's all

Me:Maybe we can ask Sam and Uncle Ben to do a wedding

Ella:Both me and Thando will be flower girls right

Me:First we will have to speak to her,now let's go and welcome our guests

.

.

CARL

.

.

We were now at the drive way and I must say the house is totally out of this world

Drew:Wow this looks a castle

Chad:Is this our new home

Biza:Yes

.

.

As we were waiting a beautiful women walked out,one could see that she was expecting and her beautiful bump hugged her beautiful body(her baby bump suited her),she was then followed by a little girl who had an big curly afro,any one can see that this is mother and daughter

Me:Wow do such beautiful people exist

Biza:(laughing)If you think she is the only one wait till you see Ms Vilakazi and Ms Meyer,one would swear that they were all made to perfection

Me:And who are they

Biza:The women you looking at is your sister Ndoni,I'm sure you going meet Ms Vilakazi she

is Ms Gibson older sister

Me:She has another sister

Biza:Yes she is very nice,I'm guess very soon  
you will meet her

.

.

Ndoni slowly made her way to the car,she was  
wearing this flowly dress,and her messy bun  
was doing wonders on her natural look

.

.

Ndoni:Biza(smiling)

Biza:(smiling)Ms Gibson

Ndoni:(laughing)You know I don't like you  
calling me that

Biza:You know how Mr Gibson can be  
sometimes

Ndoni:He is such a party pooper that one,so are you staying over for lunch

Biza:I have to go and see the kittens

Ndoni:(smiling)I'm sure Ben has been calling you non-stop,it seems like he wants the whole crew to see the kittens

Biza:I'm looking forward to seeing them,you know while Ms Vilakazi was pregnant he was very emotional

Ndoni:Oh my goodness where are my manners,excuse me just that I'm catching up with my brother from another mother

Me:(smiling)No it's fine we understand

Ndoni:My name is Ndoni,this is my daughter Tyrella but we call her Ella,her twin brother went out with his dad they will be here shortly

Me:Nice to finally meet you Ndoni I must say you really look beautiful,well my name is Carl,this is Chad and Charles and my daughter

Drew:My name is Drew

Ndoni:(laughing)I see we have a talkative one,guess her and my daughter will get well together...Please come in Biza leave the bags Anthony and Bradford will take care of the bags

.

.

Ella:So uncle Bee did you bring me and Berries anything

Biza:Speaking of which where is berries,I'm sure where ever he is he is missing his boo boo so much

Ella:Berries is sick so daddy had to take him to the doctor

Biza:Will I was thinking of visiting Uncle Ben and Sam so I don't know whether your mommy

Ndoni:She can go with you,can you please wait for Travis first maybe he will want to go too



Ella:Are we going to see the kittens

Biza:Yes my love

[07/05, 20:26] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

.

.

NOSIZWE

.

.

Me:Please Sticks forgive me I promise that I will get you back your money

Sticks:You have been saying that for the past three months,how long should I wait

Me:Just give me one more month Sticks and you will have your money

Sticks: Tell me Nosizwe why are you trying to live a fancy life knowing very well that you can not afford it

Me: And I believe that it has nothing to do with you

Sticks: (laughing) In case you do not know this is my territory, you need to wake up and smell the coffee this is not England, America... here you are a nobody and actually nobody cares what you do

Me: I believe that we are done

Sticks: You think that this money belongs to me well sisi I work for someone, word of advice pay his money before he pays you a visit and I must say those who didn't pay him, never lived to see the day

Me: Aaargh you are just bluffing, I will see you when I have money

Sticks: Hahahaha you are taking this warning

lightly I see,good luck Nosizwe carry on playing these games of yours and see if you are not going to get burnt

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Ella:When are we leaving?

Drew:Where you going,can I come with

Carl:Not today baby maybe next time  
okay,remember you still need to take a warm  
bath

Me:Ella we waiting for your twin to arrive,now  
come on Drew don't be sad we are going to  
have so much fun

Ella:Mom can I sleep over at Thando I miss her  
and Mila

Me:They will be coming over for a while until  
Sam and the kittens come back home

Ella:(screaming)Why didn't you say so

Me:Take your cousins to the play room or show  
them the movie room I will call you when  
needed

Ella:Uncle Bee call me when you are leaving  
okay

Biza:(smiling)I promise princess

Drew:But you said I was princess

Biza:You are both my princesses

Ella:And Thando

Me:And Nizzy and Izzy

Biza:(laughing)Let me go and make a  
call,excuse me

.

.

Biza left and the kids also went to playroom leaving me with this beautiful young sister of mine

.

.

Me:You so quiet is everything okay?

Carl:I'm just trying to snap out of the dream cause right now it feels like I'm dreaming,never in my entire life have I seen such a beautiful house

Me:(laughing)You think that this is something wait till you see my sister house,hers is out of this world

Carl:Can't wait to see them,by the way Biza was talking about them it made me keen on meeting them

Me:You will only meet Sam now,Shanell doesn't live here...now come let me show you your rooms,you guys can pick any room that you

want but first let the older one choose first

Carl:Can Drew share a room with me,she always sleeps with me

Me:Yes baby but I'm sure she is going to want to sleep with her cousin's today

Carl:You mean Thando and Mila?

Me:Yes she will share a room with Thando and Mila usually sleeps with Travis or with me when my husband is not around

Carl:How old is Mila?

Me:He is two

Carl:Can't wait to meet them

Me:Now come and pick any room of your choice if you don't like the decor we will change them

.

.

NOSIZWE

.

.

I was now driving back home I really missed my babies I know that I was rude to them earlier on but now I brought them their favourite pizza,it usually does the work

.

.

When I pulled over the drive way the house was dark

Me:Wonder why didn't they switch on the lights,can't they see its in the evening,they probably playing with TV games

.

.

When I entered the house something just didn't feel right,there was no sign of the children any where

Me:Kids mommy is home,Drew granny brought you your favourite social ice-cream

[07/05, 20:29] W: S2

.

.

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

.

.

Nosizwe looked everywhere searching every room but still she could not find any trace of where her children were...to make things worse they didn't even leave a letter behind,now looking for them will be like searching for a pearl in a grain of sand.She always wanted them to leave but it never dawned to her that her wish will be fulfilled and that they would leave without her knowing about their whereabouts

.



.

She was now panicking because she made a deal with Drew's father the one who is responsible for her daughter losing her innocence,at first Nosizwe did not believe her until the man came looking for Drew and Carl,he claims that he wants to be in Drew life and he also wants to make things right by marrying Carl and taking her as his wife,he also admitted to the crime he committed on Carl

.

.

At first Nosizwe hesitated but when the man showed how much he is willing to pay,she decided that she will do anything in her power to make sure that Carl gets married,with Carl getting married it will only mean that she will have to feed less mouths and also she will afford the life she knows,which is leaving the best life that money can buy

.

.

Allow me to take you back to where Nosizwe decided to sell her daughter and grandchild to the very same man who ruined her

.

.

NOSIZWE

.

.

It was a normal day where I was minding my own business when a black Range Rover pulled over,one could see that the man who was driving it was oozing money from a far,how I wish I was younger I would have sucked the money out of him,leaving him dry and penniless,I still don't understand why Carl is not like me she is totally the opposite,she goes by the rule that "one should work hard in order for

them to be where they want to be and to afford the kind of life style they want without living on people" ...I swear she is not my daughter she was probably switched at birth but then again she looks like her father and she also inherited by body physique

The young man kept on watching me,if he is into old women than I'm game

.

.

He finally stood up and made his way to my table

.

.

Him:Excuse ma'am would you mind if I joined you for lunch,unless you are waiting for someone

Me:Luckily the person I'm waiting for will be coming in a hour,take a sit young man

Him:Thank you

Me:So tell me why we're you staring at me as if you have seen a ghost?

Him:Before we start my name is Thembelani Kenden Mvuso

Me:Nice to meet you Mvuso,you can call me Nosizwe

Kenden:Nice to meet you Nosizwe,back to your question,the reason why I was staring at you earlier on is that you remind me of someone whom I would like to make things right with

Me:And who do I look like?

Kaden:I don't know whether you have a daughter or not but you really look like Carl Jiza

Me:And how do yo know my daughter?

Keden:Cause I'm the man who took her innocence

.

.

He showed no remorse as he was saying this, what kind of a man is this cause surely he is not normal

.

.

Me:(shouting)WHO THE HELL DO YOU THINK YOU ARE,NOT ONLY DID YOU RAPE HER YOU LEFT HER WITH YOUR SEED

Kaden:Can you lower your voice down,what do you mean I left my seed?

Me:What are the consequences of not using protection

Kaden:You telling me that Carl had my baby..(smiling)

Me:Sies aren't you ashamed after what you did to my daughter,you deserve to rot in jail

Kaden:Been there done that...like I said I would

like to make things right with Carl and since she is the mother of my first born I want to marry her

Me:(laughing)You must be kidding me,do you think I will allow the very same man who ruined my baby get married to you never

Kaden:She is already damage goods no man is going to want her,and I totally don't want another man raising my heir

Me:You have a daughter not a son

Kaden:Still she is my heir and I want to be part of her life,I believe I have wasted a lot of time being absent

Me:If you want both Carl and Drew you will need to pay...upfront

Kaden:Name your prize

Me:Let me first think about it

Kaden:How about 1 million now and you will get the rest when you deliver

Me:Deal

Kaden:Nice doing business with you,I will be in touch

.

.

With that being said he walked out leaving me stunted that I have just sold Carl and Drew

.

.

What kind of a mother am I,first it was Ndoni and now Carl and Drew

Me:Oh come on Nosizwe this is not the first time you are doing this,remember you left Ndoni without even looking back and I'm sure you are going to forget about Carl and Drew,just like you did with Ndoni

.

.

Me:What am I going to do now that Carl and Drew are not here and the most crazy thing is that I used up all the money that Kaden gave me,now how am I going to tell him that both Carl and Drew are no where to be find

.

[07/05, 20:32] W: S2

.

.

CHAPTER NINETEEN(CROP TOP)

.

.

NOMPILO

.

.

I was busy doing some dishes when Nosizwe



call came through

Me:Nosizwe is everything okay baby?

Nosizwe:(crying)Mama are the kids with you?

Me:Haibo kanti kwenzeke ntoni ngku(what has happened now)

Nosizwe:We just had a small silly misunderstanding,and now there are no where to be found

Me:I'm sure they will come back baby,they probably want you to cool down

Nosizwe:Mama you don't get it the kids took their belongings with them,not only that they took their important documents with them

Me:Haibo Nosizwe where could they probably be

Nosizwe:I really don't know nam,how I wish Ndoni was around

Me:Don't worry baby they will come around,let

me call Ndoni and let her know the matter at hand

Nosizwe:Can I please come over

Me:Bab'Dlamini and I will come just in a minute,just hold on baby

Nosizwe:Thank you mom

.

.

With that being said she dropped the call,I went to Bab'Dlamini who was watching the news

Me:Baba

Bab'Dlamini:Mm

Me:Can I please have your ear,something bad has come up

Bab'Dlamini:Is everything fine with Sam and the triplets or is Ndoni having the baby?

Me:No no no they are both fine,listen Nosizwe has just given me a call she says that the kids

are missing

Bab'Dlamini:How can they go missing,they don't know anyone else other than us

Me:She is really hurt Baba we should go and see her

Bab'Dlamini:You can just leave me behind,until she gives a valid reason on why she left Ndoni and why she is here,she won't be seeing me anytime soon,if you can excuse me the whether is about to be show cased

Me:How can you say that,her children are missing

Bab'Dlamini:They are probably fine where ever they are,you should tell that daughter of yours to fix her attitude or she will personally have to deal with me

Me:Than if you are not going than who is going to take me

Bab'Dlamini:You can use the taxi.

[07/05, 20:36] W: CHAPTER NINETEEN

.

.

KOURTNEY

.

.

Carl was telling me everything that she went through including how Drew was conceived

.

.

Me:So how did Nompilo take this?

Carl:At first she blamed me,she told me that I was asking for it and that it was bound to happen....you know there was this other time when she wanted to kick me out,bare in mind Drew at that time was only a week old...If it was not for dad I don't know where we would be

Me:Speaking of which where is your father he

seems to be a nice man,how did he meet up with a woman like Nompilo

Carl:(smiling)He is a very good guy,well he always says that he fell for her good looks not knowing the kind of a person she was

Me:But he could have walked away from the get go you know before all of this got out of hand

Carl:He said that walking away was never easy especially now that there were kids involved,to sum all of this dad lost custody over us all because mom milked him dry before he was about to file for divorce,so the court ruled in her favour since dad won't be able to take care of us that's what they think....but I know he is doing everything in his power to get us back

Me:Seems like you are a daddy girl,I must say you are very lucky to know your father but I on the other hand only know that mine was a married man and that I was an unplanned pregnancy better yet a meal ticket to Nompilo

good life but when that didn't happen she left me behind and I was raised by Gogo..If she didn't leave me behind I guess I wouldn't be where I am today...so tell me do you guys want to go back or do you want to leave here with me and my family

Carl:We would love to live here but mostly we would like our father to be close I know that he has nothing left on that side....All I want is to have him around

Me:And I would like to meet him,listen you guys can stay here as long as you like and I will have talk with my husband and see what he can do regarding your father situation maybe he can gain custody over you guys

Carl:That will mean so much me sis...Thank you

Me:(smiling)You don't need to thank me...that's what an older sister does,now come on get some rest I will take care of the boys and Drew

Carl:She tends to cry when I'm not around

please ask Chad or Charles to bring her up

Me:I will do so

.

.

Carl got into the covers before before she closed her eyes I gave her a kiss on on the forehead

.

.

Carl:(laughing)You do know know that I am to old for that

Me:You my younger sister that's why you know I'm glad that I am not going to tone the young one in in the pack cause Sam and Shanell always treat me like a baby

.

.

NOMPILO

.

.

Me:So you are telling me that I should use use the taxi at this time of the night?

Bab'Dlamini:You of all people should know that I don't drive at this time of the night unless there is an emergency

Me:But this is an emergency,your grandkids are missing for crying out loud

Bab'Dlamini:Like I said before I'm sure where ever they are they they are perfectly fine now now stop worrying

Me:You know let me get going before it gets dark,Nosizwe is probably losing her mind

Bab'Dlamini:Mmm close the door on your way out....I hope my food is ready

Me:That's all you go care about

Bab'Dlamini:I will pretend as if I didn't hear that



.

.

BONNIE

.

.

Nomhle:You know what to do right?

Me:Can you just stop telling me what not to do..I know what I have to do

Nomhle:I just don't want you to mess up that's all,now go and do what you do best

Me:Wish me luck

Nomhle:You don't need luck baby now go in there and show me what you made of

.

.

I was waiting for Ben in the waiting area when he walked in looking all handsome with his

unshaved look,I must say he looked so good no amount of words can describe this alpha male in front of me,I so wish to be Sam right now her for one she looks so beautiful,how is it possible for two beautiful people to be together....I envy Sam she is beautiful inside and out,she even managed to turn a player like Ben into a family man...which is something always thought I would do

.

.

The one who should be sleeping in this hospital bed is me not Sam,I should be the one who gave Ben his third borns not Sam

.

.

Ben:Sorry to keep you waiting

Me:Don't worry about it just got here

.

.

.

MY MY PHONE IS ACTING UP

[07/05, 20:38] W: CHAPTER TWENTY

.

.

BONNIE

.

.

Me:So tell me will Sam be joining us?

Ben:She is still taking a nap

Me:Why is something wrong with her?

Ben:(laughing)Of cause not dummy she is just exhausted from all the feeding and bare in mind her body carried three lives,so right now her body is resting

Me:Can't believe she carried three lives I

probably wouldn't have done that, speaking of which have you spoken to Mpho after all she is the reason why your wife and babies are in here

Ben: I would rather not talk about her

Me: So are you telling me that you are not going to do anything about that, like seriously who is this man in front of me cause surely he is not the Ben I know

Ben: Tell me about the Ben you know, wait here let me ask one of the nurses to join us

Me: Is it me or is everyone looking at you

Ben: (laughing) Tell me something I don't know, these are the looks I have been getting everyday ever since my family has been admitted

.

.

Even a fool can see how much Ben loves his wife, the way his eyes brighten up by just only a

mention of Sam name,why can't he look at me like that,why didn't he look at me like that in the first place,am I stupid to hold on to a night which means nothing to him,he was talking with a nurse who was flirting around,one thing that irritated me is the fact that all of this belonged to Sam

.

.

As I was waiting for him a old woman came to stand where I was standing

.

.

Women:You need to let go of this bitterness before you lose yourself child

Me:I don't know who the hell you are but I don't know what you are talking about

Women:You may be fooling everyone around you but you can't fool me nor God the one who

joined them,let me tell you that whatever you are planning is going to end badly someone is going to lose their life...I see blood so much blood,child stop this before this gets out of hand,innocent lives will be hurt

Me:(laughing)Lady whatever you are smoking is making you crazy...and you are telling me about God,let me tell you something well God is not here at the moment last time I heard He is in heaven and I am here,you think that this little warning of yours is going to scare me will think again none of that will be happening,in fact you know what I am bitter...do you know why the man I love married someone else

Women:He was not your husband in the beginning,you are both not destined to be together...Please stop whatever you are doing before you get hurt...before I live I want to tell you something...you think that God is sitting in Heaven while I got some news for you,He is present at this very moment...you may not see

Him or have a relationship with Him but He wants me to tell you that He loves you and that He does not want you to take this path, you know what you are doing is wrong but at the end of the day know that God won't let His children suffer

He really loves you Bonnie what you are looking for in Benjamin you are never going to find it because he is not the one...stop this whole thing before you suffer the consequences of your actions

.

.

With that being said she walked away leaving me thinking about what she has just said, is it possible that I might die, a lot of things were going through my mind until I felt a hand which brought me back to earth

.

.

Ben:Finally you have snapped out of your dream,you know we have been calling you for the past 15 mins

Me:Where is the old lady I was talking to just just a few minutes ago

Ben:What are you talking about,you were standing all by yourself

Me:Ben you were busy talking to the nurse...a...nd the old women was standing where you are standing

Ben:Bonnie I promise you...you were standing on your own there was no old women here

Me:Are you trying to tell me that I'm imagining things,that I'm losing my mind

Ben:Don't tell me you are using again  
Bonnie,how many times must we tell you that coke is not good for you,do you want to go 6 feet under cause that's where you are going



and this time we won't bother,we got better things to do than to run around after you...I'm married and I'm a father not to two but five...I don't have any money to splash around

Me:I know what I saw Benjamin and I'm not using I haven't had any coke since...you know

Ben:You better be telling the truth cause this time I'm not wasting my money or time to get you clean and know both John and Ty will do the same...We don't have money to spend on someone who doesn't want to change

Me:Can you stop telling me what I already know,now can we get this over and done with

Ben:Please leave your dirty attitude at the door but first let's go and check Sam

Me:(rolling eyes)Do we really have to go and see her,we can see the kittens than her

Ben:I'm missing my wife and we are not doing this without her

.

.

We made our way to Sam room I don't know why but something was just not right it felt like my insides were burning up

Me:Ummmh you know what you go so long I need to use the bathroom

Ben:But we are one room away from Sam and she has a bathroom you can use hers instead of the public toilet...is everything okay...you are sweating Bonnie come let's go to the room

.

.

I tired fighting Ben but he forced me into the room,I swear the room felt like fire...have you ever felt like you are close to the fire and then you experience that heat,that was how I was feeling

Sam was sleeping and Ben made his way to her

side

Me:I'm going to the bathroom well you wake her up

.

.

Me:(Text)Nomhle this muti is not working on Ben instead he it seems like he is not effected by it and to make things worse I don't know what's going on with me,the moment I entered Sam room my whole body is burning up,are you sure you gave me the right amount cause surely there is something wrong

.

.

My sister called

.

.

Me:What?

Nomhle:So tell me what's going on

Me:This whole thing is a bad idea Nomhle I don't know what's going on with me but something is not right...I'm even seeing people whom others can't see

Nomhle:All you need to do is to calm down okay...you are over reacting let me call Bab'Moloi and see what he has to say about this

Me:Call me as quickly as you get a response

Nomhle:Sharp

.

.

I was still waiting for my sister to call when somebody knocked

on the bathroom door

.

.

Me:Still in here

Sam:Is everything okay love,Ben told me that you were sweating earlier,should I call a doctor for you

Me:I'm perfectly fine I just needed a cold shower I hope you don't mind me using your bathroom

Sam:Of cause not...tell us when you done we are going out a bit

Me:I will shout if I need anything

.

.

Just than Nomhle called she really took her sweet time

.

.

Me:What took you so long

Nomhle:Bab'Moloi says you should take one of

Sam undergarments

Me:Wait a minute....how did he know I'm in the bathroom

Nomhle:Just do as you are being told now hurry up

Me:What is he going to do with them

Nomhle:Do you want Ben are not?

Me:I do

Nomhle:Now hurry up and bring those garments

Me:This better work Nomhle

Nomhle:Leave that place as in now

Me:What about Ben?

Nomhle:You will tell him that you had to rush somewhere

Me:And the triplets...is the plan of kidnapping them still on

Nomhle:We will talk about everything once you

get here,now come Bab'Moloi does not have the whole day

.

.

I'M SORRY FOR NOT POSTING GUYS

[07/05, 20:41] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

3 WEEKS LATER

.

.

Voice:You need to be careful whom you bring around your family

Me:What do you mean?

Voice: This is not the time to be playing around with your family Benjamin, you need to be joined with your wife in prayer cause that's the only thing that will get you through

Me: What are you talking about...tell me is something going to happen to my family

Voice: This is the time to walk by Faith and not by sight..All shall be revealed very soon...know that God is God that He does not test you beyond what you can handle, no matter what happens know that God is with you

Zephaniah 3:17

"17. The Lord your God is with you, He is mighty to save"

Remember those words Benjamin....God is Faithful

.

.

Sam: Benjamin wake up you are having a dream



.

.

My wife's voice woke me up

.

.

Sam:Is everything okay...you were mumbling in your sleep

Me:I just had a weird dream...I don't know whether I'm dreaming or over thinking but I can't shake the feeling that something bad is about to happen

Sam:You know you have been saying that for the past three weeks and you know that the kittens are coming home very soon let's concentrate on that my love

Me:You don't understand Sam...This voice told me that this is the time where I should be joined with you in prayer and that very soon I should walk by faith and not by sight...baby I even got a

quote

Sam:Tell me about it

Me:I don't remember clearly but it said  
that,know that your Lord God is with you and He  
is mighty to save

Sam:Seems like a verse in one of the chapters  
in the bible

Me:I don't know what's going to happen but we  
need to stand together my love

Sam:Mm now you believe me

Me:Come let us pray

.

.

BONNIE

.

.

Me:Are you sure that this plan of yours is going

to work,cause you made me steal Sam's undergarments and nothing has happened to her

Nomhle:Mxm can we not talk about that...even Bab'Moloi doesn't know what's going on...All he said is that we should stop what we are doing cause Sam and Ben are highly protected by God,can you believe that a man who uses medicine believes that there is a God(laughing)

Me:What if he is right though Nomhle,you know for the past three weeks we have waited on Sam losing her mind,and Ben leaving her but none of that has happened

Nomhle:Which is why we are going ahead with plan A,we should have done this a long time ago...Bab'Moloi actually used us I'm starting to think he doesn't even know what he is doing

.

.

Me:So tell me do you trust this nurses,are you sure they are not going to rat you out

Nomhle:If they do they can kiss their loved ones goodbye and I actually paid them a good sum of money,with that kind of money they can stop working as in today,the money will last them a life time and maybe they can take a trip or start over..Over seas

Me:You better tell them to lie low,we don't want this pointing back to them at least let them know that they can spend the money after a year or two cause you know that Ben and his guys are going to do some snooping

Nomhle:Don't worry they don't know me

.

.

Me:So tell me how are we going to get the kittens?

Nomhle:I told them to drop them off by the

hospital exist

Me:Aren't they fragile to be outside the incubator..it's in the middle of the night  
Nomhle...We don't want to kill them

Nomhle:They are perfectly fine in case you didn't know they are no longer in the ICU they are breathing on their own,can't wait to meet the little Vilakazi's...imagine how this is going to hurt Ben not only is this going to hurt him but Sam is going to leave him and you little sister are going to get your man

.

.

We were waiting for this when Nomhle got a text from the nurses telling her that they have left the triplets at the exist

.

.

Nomhle:Are you ready for this?

Me:Let's get this over and done with,so is Tobb ready?

Nomhle:Yes his guys are waiting for us at the garage we are going to switch cars

Me:And the baby stuff is everything ready?

Nomhle:Everything is done and dusted

Me:Than let's do this

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

After praying with my wife we retired back to sleep when my phone started ringing,at first I didn't answer until Sam started complaining about the loud ringing tone

.

.

Sam:You know some of us are trying to sleep

Me:Let me switch it off

Sam:Just answer it might be important

.

.

Me:Vilakazi speaking hello

Caller:You are speaking to Doctor Van Zyl the  
CEO of the hospital

Me:Is everything okay...my kittens are they okay?

Van Zyl:That's the reason why I have called you  
sir...you need to come down here something  
has happened to them

Me:Get you get to the freaking point

Van Zyl:I'm afraid I can't say this over the phone  
sir

Me:If you don't say anything in the next five

minutes I swear that I will hunt down your family..

Van Zyl:Okay...your kittens have been Kidnapped Mr Vilakazi

Me:(laughing)Is this some kind of joke

Van Zyl:I'm dead serious Mr Vilakazi

.

.

I swear at that moment my heart stopped beating for a moment

.

.

Sam:Baby what's wrong,who was calling you...Benjamin tell me what's wrong

.

.

How can I tell her that our kittens are no where



to be found, she and the kids are looking forward to the arrival of the kittens and now this...my kittens are gone and I don't know how to tell Sam

.

.

Me: They gone

Sam: What are you talking about. ..who?

Me: Someone kidnapped the kittens

[07/05, 20:44] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

.

.

TOBBY

.

.

Millie: You seem very happy about this

Me: Who wouldn't be finally all things are

coming together and the guys won't know where this attack is coming from(smiling)

Millie:This calls in for a toast to be honest I never liked Benjamin he was always rude towards...to be honest I'm so going to enjoy this,his little ones are going to be living under this roof

Me:He must be going crazy

Millie:I must say Bonnie has some guts...she really loves Ben to do all of this for him and to make things worse she has batrayed her crew

Me:The things that women do for love,remember you are also one of them

Millie:You know I can't wait for what is going to happen to that Ndoni,if I was Tyrese I would tighten security cause one mistake Ndoni is out

Me:Let us toast

Millie:To us

.

.

As I was about to open the Moët Nomhle  
catwalked her way in followed by Bonnie who  
seemed stressed

.

.

Nomhle:Don't tell me you were going to drink  
with out us

Me:The women of the hour let's get this started  
already

Bonnie:I need to rest

Nomhle:You need to loosen up Bonnie...Ben is  
not going to find out that you are the one  
behind the kittens kidnapping,now relax and  
have some champagne

Bonnie:You guys really don't know how ruthless  
Benjamin is

Millie:Tell us something we don't

know....boring(laughing)now I need a drink let's get this party started

Me:Bonnie if you are going to ruin this for us than its best if you leave us to our celebration without your negativity....you knew what you were getting yourself into now deal with consequences

Millie:At least when I die let me die knowing that I made Tyrese and his crew sweat

Nomhle:Cause surely we are going to die,those guys really don't play

Millie:Than let's enjoy this while we can,Bonnie baby you signed your death wish baby girl

Bonnie:I....I..I...I can't do this...

.

.

She took out her phone and dialed a number

.

.

Nomhle: Bonnie can you calm down you are not going to die, now give me the phone

Bonnie: I..I ne....eed to tell Ben....that we are the ones who took the kittens

.

.

I couldn't let her rat us out...its better that she dies sooner rather than later

.

.

Me: Any last words (pointing the gun at Bonnie)

Bonnie: (crying) Please don't do this....I....I promise I won't say anything....Nomhle why aren't you doing anything

Nomhle: He can as well kill you right now...I really don't care you died the moment you took everything I loved away from me

Bonnie:But...but....y...ou used me didn't you

Nomhle:(laughing)Finally she catches on the train was already leaving you love...did you really think that I would forgive you after what you did to me and Steve...my Steve who later became our Steve

Bonnie:(crying)It...was....a....a mistake Nomhle

Nomhle:(laughing)So it was a mistake you seducing my husband,it was a mistake that you got pregnant and I couldn't fall pregnant,it was a mistake that he saw you women enough and I on the other hand was nothing,remember when he tossed me out like a dog in the house that I helped him build and you little sister you saw it fit that you deserved to be the other women....you are the reason why I lost my miracle baby...Bonnie I lost my baby because of you

Bonnie:(crying)I'm sorry I didn't know okay...I was an addict okay...I did anything just to get a

fix..falling pregnant was never part of the plan  
Nomhle:And that means going as far has  
sleeping with your sisters husband....you know  
what I hate you Bonnie I hate you with every  
fibre in my body...TOBBY do me a favour and  
end her life and ooh before you go...I was the  
one who killed that bastard of yours...you  
should have seen his tiny feet kick while I  
placed the pillow on his beautiful chubby  
cheeks

Bonnie:Y....ooou killed my baby...but...The  
doctor said he died of crib death

Nomhle:I paid the doctor to lie love I killed little  
Mac just like you killed my baby

.

.

With that being said she came to me taking the  
gun in my hand,she shot her sister twice in the  
head and after doing that she walked out

leaving me, Millie stunned by what just happened

.

.

Millie: What the hell just happened, wow I'm never messing with Nomhle ever again... The woman is coo-coo but don't tell her I said that

Me: Let me call the guys to come and clean this

Millie: I need a drink

[07/05, 20:45] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

.

.

SAM

.

.



Me:(laughing)Nice one tell me you are joking Ben,that my kittens are safe and sound and that what you are telling me is a lie

Ben:I wish this was all a lie and that this is some type of a nightmare that we can wake up from any minute

Me:(tearing up)You lying...mummy Zen,Nizi and Izzy are perfectly sleeping in their cribs they..they

Ben:Baby just can you calm down

Me:DON'T YOU DARE TELL ME TO CALM DOWN,MY KIDS ARE OUT THERE WHO NO WHERE AND YOU ARE TELLING ME TO CALM DOWN

Ben:SHOUTING AT ME WON'T SOLVE ANYTHING OKAY...IT'S CERTAINLY NOT GOING TO GET US ANYWHERE...Please Sam try to calm down

Me:Easy for you to say...do you know how it

feels to know that the very same beings which you carried for 7 months are no where to be found

Ben:You need to understand that the kittens are also mine,the pain that you are feeling I feel it too...This is not the time for us to doing this Sam,let's focus our engery on finding the kittens

.

.

Me:My guess is that Mpho is behind all of this...she wanted the kittens dead

Ben:Mpho is no more Sam so she is out of the equation

Me:What are you talking about?

Ben:I killed her okay,she is no longer on this earth...she is six feet under

Me:When did this happen....I thought you decided not to seek for revenge....y...ou

Ben:One thing you should know about me is that I don't let anyone who hurts those I love live,that's my rule

Me:You can't go around killing people Benjamin

Ben:(laughing)I only kill those who mess with me and my family,what Mpho did is wrong she almost killed you and the kittens and right now it seems like the person who is messing with me doesn't really know me,nci nci you know I was trying to stop this life but nci nci eish some people really know how to tick you off

.

.

He was now pacing up the room with his hands on his hips,he does this when he is stressed or angry but right now he was not stressed he was so angry,he was keeping himself composed but I can tell that he wants to realise,even veins were popping out of his forehead,he kept on biting his lower lip

.

.

Me:So if it is not Mpho than who else can it be?

Ben:Tobby

Me:Who the heck is Tobby?

Ben:Let me call Tyrese and John I think it's time we paid Tobby a visit,he didn't keep his side of the deal so why should we keep ours

Me:Vilakazi you are really scaring me now,let us just call the police I'm sure the hospital has already notified them

Ben:I'm not going to involve the police in this,do you know that nower days we no longer have good cops but we have dirty cops who will do anything for some money and now you are telling me to involve them...I'm going to do this my way....Thee Vilakazi way

Me:Where ever you are going then I'm going,if you are going to get your hands dirty than I

might as well get mine dirty too,we are in this together,if you are willing to risk your life than I'm willing to risk my life for our family

.

.

Ben:Sam I won't lie and say this is not going to get out of hand,to be honest guns are going to be involved,blood spill a lot of things are going to happen

Me:You are going to teach me right,we aren't going to attack this Toby without a plan

Ben:He really thinks we are stupid...Sam get the kids ready they will be spending some time at Ndoni,baby you don't have to do this

Me:We are in this together Vilakazi,I'm standing besides you not as Sam the loving,caring mother or wife but now I'm standing as the Boss Lady andithi(isn't)I have to be hardcore

Ben:Let's get moving we don't have much

time, right now I need to call John he needs to activate the kittens tracker

Me: They have trackers, why am I in the dark so much

Ben: (laughing) Don't worry I will find you

Me: No wonder you are so chilled, so you are trying to tell me that you have this all under control than why don't we strike now

Ben: The enemy will be watching our every move so whoever is behind this needs to think that we are totally losing it, Sam I want you to act

Me: Okay I can do that, but won't the enemy know that the kittens have a tracker or something

Ben: It's a micro chip it can't be found so relax everything is going to be fine, they won't detect it my love

Me: So you are telling me that even myself I have a tracker hidden somewhere?

Ben:Yes,make sure you pack blacks clothes

.

.

KOUTNEY

.

.

My family and I were having some dinner,my siblings have settled in well and everything was going well

Pea is growing and he is very activate,he does a lot of kicking nower days

.

.

Drew:When are we meeting Pea Aunty?

Me:Very soon baby only one more month left and he will be here

Ella:Can't wait to her in my arms

Travis:Who said that mommy is having a girl?

Ella:Cause I know so

Ty:Oh boy here we go again

Carl:(laughing)I wonder who is going to win  
Berries or Boo Boo

Me:(laughing)We will have to wait and see

.

.

Carl:Still no word from mom and grandmother

Me:No but Bab'Dlamini says that we don't have  
to worry our secret is safe with him

Carl:Still can't believe he hasn't told gran  
anything

Me:Your mother would have been here  
already,so tell what's going on between you and  
Biza

Carl:(blushing)Nothing we just friends,he's he's  
a good guy you know



Me:If my eyes were not deceiving I would say that Biza might have a crush on you

Carl:On me oh please who would want to date someone who has already have a child and I'm damaged goods

Me:Hey hey hey I don't ever want to hear you say that do you hear me

Carl:Yes ma'am

Me:You are not damaged goods my love,don't let what you went through DEFINE cause all I see in front of me is a young lady against all odds she managed to pull through and not only that you are one great mom,Drew is blessed to have you as a mother

Carl:Okay okay no more letting myself down,can't believe the kittens are arriving they are so cute and I miss sis Sam and Shanell

Me:You are making me jealous...you should give them a call

Carl:I promised Sis Shanell that I will be visiting her this weekend

Me:You should go my love

.

.

My sister and I continued to talk until we heard Ty cursing he doesn't do that unless something bad happened

.

.

Me:Let me go and check on him

Carl:I will be with the kids

Me:Thanks love

.

.

Me:How many times must I tell you to close your door when you want to swear,you do know

that we have not one but two miss nosey  
business

.

.

My husband was sitting on his chair with his  
hands on his face,I could tell by his body  
language that something was wrong

Me:Babe what's wrong?

Ty:I don't know how to say this but I want you to  
calm down okay....Flip

Me:Just talk already

Ty:The kittens have been kidnapped and Ben is  
suspecting Toby

Me:I always told you to kill that physco brother  
of yours

Ty:Ndoni

Me:What...If he is behind this I hope that Ben  
puts a bullet through his thick skull, so what's

going to happen?

Ty:You know what's going to happen

Me:Esh is about to go down

Ty:This is war and if my brother is really behind this he better be prepared cause we are coming after him

Me:And I will be watching..

Ty:You not going anywhere Ndoni think about Pea

Me:If Sam is going I'm going and you Mr are not going to stop me

.

.

WE ARE NEARLY DONE ONLY THREE  
CHAPTERS LEFT

[07/05, 20:48] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR

.

.

NOMHLE

.

.

I know you guys are probably wondering how I just killed my sister without thinking twice, she ruined my life by taking away what I loved the most... The very same sister who was supposed to be my shoulder to cry on, is the one who caused me to cry, my sister really betrayed me

.

.

I was laying on my back when Toby walked in, the triplets were sleeping, they look so adorable

Toby: Is it safe to come in?

Me: I'm not a monster Toby so there is no need for you to walk on shells around me

Tobby:What you did back there was totally unexpected I never thought you had it in you

Me:Sometimes you really don't know what you have in you until you are hurted to a point of no return,what Bonnie did to me really hurted me I know that she was addicted to crack but that did not give her the right to sleep with my husband

Tobby:Let's not talk about the past..now Bonnie is out of the picture,let's talk about the matter at hand...so tell me what are we going to do with the triplets cause you do know we have awakened the sleeping beast

Me:And who is the sleeping beast

Tobby:(laughing)Don't tell me you don't know about Vilakazi,those who have messed with him never made it out alive,he is even worse when joined by my twin and John,those guys are unstoppable

Me:Seems like you are scared of them Tobby

Tobby:(laughing)I'm not scared of them just that I don't like messing around with them,but then again what's done is done

Me:I have heard about him but neither less he doesn't scare me

Tobby:So what are we going to do about the kids

Me:I was thinking about running away with them,I want to start over in some place but away from South Africa with the triplets beside me

Tobby:You are planning on stealing them

Me:This is my chance to be a mother again,and of cause Ben and Sam will try again,don't worry I will treat them as my own

Tobby:So when are you planning on skipping the country

Me:Maybe in a week I want you to organise some fake passports for us

Tobby:Consider that done,the sooner they leave the better it will be for everyone else

.

.

Me:Any news on how the parents are taking this?

Tobby:My guy says the mother is totally losing it,she looks like a wrack can't believe they actually believe this

Me:And Benjamin

Tobby:(laughing)I actually have a picture of him crying,both him and his wife were aguring before they boarded the car to my twin house

Me:Wow guess wifey dear wants nothing to do with husband

Tobby:It's possible that she is blaming him

Me:It's a pity that they will never get to see their little kittens every again

Tobby:Let me get going,should I call Millie to



come and help you out with the triplets,she is a mother of twins I'm sure she can give you a tip or two

Me:No I will be fine just close the door on your way out,if I need anything I promise to let you know

.

.

I was now holding my baby boy who was now sucking his thumb

Me:You are going to be one handsome young man,yes you and I'm going to be there when you take your first word,take your first step we are all going to be one big happy family just the four of us we don't need any daddy

Me:I promise to love you all unconditional,I'm going to be the best mom to you and your sisters.

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Sam:Can't believe they are spying on us already

Me:See why I told you to act cause I know they will be watching our every move

Sam:So tell me how are we going to go to the secret warehouse

Me:You will just have to wait and see my love

Thando:Daddy where are we going,are we fetching the kittens but it's still dark won't we be fetching them in the morning?

Sam:Baby you and Mila will be spending some time at Aunt Ndoni house,mommy and daddy have some business meeting that they need to attend

Thando:So how long is this business going to

take

Me:We only need a week and one day my love

Thando:So you are going to be back in 8 days  
from now

Me:Yes baby

Thando:And the kittens will be home by than  
right daddy?

Me:Yes baby now I want to be a very good  
girl,listen to Auntie Carl and take care of your  
brother

Thando:Okay daddy

[07/05, 20:50] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR

.

.

CONTINUES

.

.

Tyrese and Ndoni were both waiting for Sam and Ben in their study,neither of them were saying a word to each other.

The honest truth Ndoni didn't want her husband to go she wanted him home with the kids,she knows that there is nothing that Tyrese wouldn't do for Benjamin and John,he would even lay down his life for them but now he needs to understand that he is a father and a husband gone are those days.

.

.

Benjamin and Sam walked in and they could sense that there was some tension in the room,one thing that Sam doesn't like is when those close to her start fighting

.

.

Ben:Yhoooo there is so much tension in this

room

Sam:Not now Benjamin

Tyrese:Can we get this over and done with

Ndoni:There is no need for you to be mad at everyone,you still need to apologise to how you spoke to Ella earlier on

Tyrese:Ndoni I really don't have time for this,there are more important matters at hand

Ben:Okay guys before we get down to business,what the heck is going on

Sam:You are both are in each other's neck,and Ndoni you know that this kind of tension is not good for Pea

Tyrese:While we are still on that point why don't you tell her that her coming with us is not a good idea for it will put Peas life in danger

Ndoni:Like I said if you are going then I'm going

Tyrese:This is really ticking me off,you know

what I need some time out..away from this

Ndoni:Oh so now you are saying that I'm the problem

Tyrese:Ndoni I don't have time for your tantrums

.

.

With that being said Tyrese walked out

Ben:Let me go and talk with him

.

.

Benjamin followed Tyrese as he went to sit on the porch in the garden

.

.

Ben:Mind if I sit

Ty:Sure

Ben:So tell me what's wrong and don't tell me it's nothing

Ty:I'm just worried about the kittens that's the honest truth and now Ndoni wants to come with...she is pregnant Benjamin

Ben:Then why don't you tell her that

Ty:She is one headed women

Ben:Whom you love and married,you can't expect her to know how you feel if you don't tell her how you are feeling,right now you are challenging your anger to your loved ones.

The best way is to listen to why she doesn't want you to go,it's possible that she wants you around when Pea finally decides to come around

Ty:But you guys need me more than anything

Ben:We will strike after a week,Sam still needs to under go same defense classes,right now your wife needs you more than anything...A

man's heart is where his wife heart is and this  
here is where you wife wants you  
to be

Ty:Are you sure you don't mind me not coming?

Ben:Like I said I got this under control

Ty:Promise to keep me posted

Ben:I promise now go and have some sweet  
talk with your wife

.

.

Sam:Baby tell me what's wrong

Ndoni:I don't want him to go

Sam:Did you tell him that?

Ndoni:No

Sam:Than how do you expect him to know if  
you don't tell him,baby one thing I have learned  
is that the best tool in a relationship is



communication,if you don't communicate with each other than you will both have misunderstanding,the best way is to sit down with your husband and voice out how you feel

Ndoni:Enough about me..so tell me how are you holding up?

Sam:I'm trying just want this over and done with,I just want to hold them in my arms and never let go,somehow I wish that this is some kind of a dream that I could wake up from but then again it's reality

Ndoni:You know I just wish that Pea can come any minute from now I want to be there when Ben and John end that Toby life

Sam:Who is Toby?

Ndoni:Toby is Tyrese twin brother

Sam:Tyrese has a twin brother why nobody told me about this

Ndoni:Long story short,he is the evil twin he is

the one who had his parents murdered not only that he is the reason behind their sister death

Sam:His really bad,I hope he doesn't hurt my babies(tearing up)

Ben:He won't do anything to them my love I promise(kissing her head)

Ty:Ndoni can I have a word with you

Ndoni:If Pea comes early I'm going to join you guys..Benjamin we need to teach Toby a lesson that he will never forget I was thinking maybe we can cut his

Benjamin:(laughing)First go and have a talk with your husband then afterwards you can tell me what you have in store for Toby

Ndoni:You see why you and me are like this

Ben:(laughing)Because I get your crazy self

Ndoni:We should hang him,and feed him to the dogs

Ben:Mmmh not painful enough I want him to regret ever messing with me,you know I wanted to use his wife and child against him but they have nothing to do with this...Dam,truck,saw,wire and torch

Ndoni:(smiling)This I got to hear...don't tell me we will be human braaiing

Sam:I think I'm going to vomit

Ty:That makes the two of us...

[07/05, 20:53] W: CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

Me:I'm sorry for the way I spoke to you earlier on...The reason why I lashed out on you is because I'm worried and stressed,this whole

kidnapping thing is eish...It feels like my children are missing,you know I was the first one to hold them in my arms each one of them and now this...This whole thing feels like a stab in the heart and I can't imagine how Ben and Sam are holding up

Ndoni:That's because the kittens are our children,and I'm sorry for not understanding for only thinking about myself instead of the life I'm carrying inside of me(rubbing her stomach)

Me:You know after talking to Ben he made me realise the importance of communication in a relationship and not only that but the beauty of how one tends to express themselves to their loved one,you know when I can't be real with others let me be real with you

Ndoni:For there are times where you will need me to go deeper into explaining how I feel about a certain situation and keeping quite is never the solution

Me:So starting from today onwards we are going to try and communicate with each other

Ndoni:For shutting each other out is not going to solve the problem but rather it's going to make it worse

Me:I'm really sorry my love and don't worry I'm going to be here with you for you need me more than anything

Ndoni:But what about Ben he needs you too

Me:Ben is a big boy he knows how to handle such decisions and he even asked me himself to spend this time with you and our family

Ndoni:But you will be missing out on what you love doing the most

Me:You know Ben brought out something earlier on he said after finding the kittens he is calling it quits in this life style and I'm sure John will be doing the same...you know even though we love doing this but now our lives are not

based on what we want,we are no longer living for ourselves but now we have our own families and to be honest we still want to be around to see our kids grow,but mostly I want to spend the rest of my life with this beautiful women standing in front of me,my love,my heart and my everything...you know you are the best thing that has ever happened to me

Ndoni:(smiling)And you old man are the best that has happened to me too...even though there are times I make you lose your mind but thank you for loving me unconditional but mostly thank you for accepting me the way I am,there has never been a time where you tired to change me and for that thank you my love....you know what I love about life is the fact that we never stop learning and I'm glad that I have someone like you to share all these new learning experience

Me:Let's seal this of with a kiss

Ndoni:Mwah Gibson

Me:(laughing)Mcwaaaaah Pinkie wam,Ndoni  
yam

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Me:You know for the past two years with you  
have been nothing but a blessing Ave

Sam:You always tell me this my love

.

.

Both Sam and Ben were waiting for Ndoni and  
Ty to come back from their talk,they were laying  
on one of Ty's three sitted leather couch,just  
cuddling each other with Sam laying her head  
on her husband chest,listening to the sound of

her husband heart beat

.

.

Ben:So I'm gonna love you

Like I'm gone lose you(singing)

Sam:I'm gonna hold you

Like I'm saying goodbyyyye

Ben:I won't take you for granted

Sam:I'm gonna love you,like I'm saying goodbye  
goodbye

Ben:I'm gonna love you

Sam:Like I'm gonna lose you

.

.

Ben:(laughing)My love you are so bad when it  
comes to remebering lyrics

.



.

Sam:I give my life to have

Just one more night with you

I risk my life to feel,your body next to mine

And can't go on(singing)

Ndoni:Woouoooooh yes girl(laughing)

Ty:Why do you guys love singing to each other

Me:Because there are times where words can't  
express the love that's inside of you

And to answer your question

Ben:(looking at Sam)She gives me  
love,love,love,love crazy love

She gives me love,love,love,love..crazy  
love(smiling)

Ty:Okay we get the point you love your wife

Ndoni:There's no need for you to be jealous

Ty:Don't tell me you enjoy listening to this crazy

voice

Ndoni:Jealous down but Ben knows how to sing  
unlike someone who can't hold a note

Ty:(laughing)At least both you and I my love are  
bad singers

Sam:It's good see you guys in love  
again(smiling)

Ty:Do you both know how much that couch  
costed,all you are doing are busy being lovey  
dovey in my study,you know we have plenty of  
room

Me:We like it here

Ndoni:So Ben tell me what do you have in store  
for Toby(smiling)I want to hear what you are  
going to do with him....oh oh please connect us  
via Skype I want to see everything

Ty:I doubt they will Internet connection

Ndoni:Ben and John will make a plan,so tell me  
brother what do you have in store for Evil Toby

Sam:Who would have thought that Ndoni can be this ruthless,you watch to many horror movies

Me:I was thinking of taking him to a isolated place,where we have a dam or lake close by

Ndoni:And then what?

Ty:Can you hold your horses he is still telling us his plan

Sam:I'm going to check on the kids

Me:(laughing)And who is going to keep me warm?

Sam:The cushions

Me:(laughing)I'm afraid I can't tell you Ndoni,my heater is leaving me so you will have to wait and see than

Ty:(laughing)Nice one brother

Ndoni:Mmmh something tells me you don't have a plan

Me:(smiling)Oh I do...There won't be fun if I tell you all about it you just have to wait and see

Ndoni:Aaaaargh let it be next week already,Sam come on don't go I want to hear what Ben has in store you know before I left he said dam,wire,fire,truck I just want to know what he will do

Sam:I don't want to have bad dreams Ndoni

Ndoni:Tell me how are you going to kill people let me tell you something sisi you see him(pointing at Ty)he is very good when it comes to shooting...His favourite part is when he hears the sound of a blasting brain now tell me Sam do you know how nasty that is?

.

.

My wife was starting to get sick just by the thought of it and Ndoni on the other hand was laughing

Me:(laughing)You making my wife sick

Ndoni:I'm just telling her what to expect,you know there is going to be a time where you will have to shoot before you get killed

Sam:I will cross that bridge when I get there,excuse me

Ty:(laughing)The bathroom is on the third door on your left

Me:(laughing)This is not funny guys

Ndoni:If it's not funny than why are you laughing

Ty:On a serious note though Sam needs to suck it up,so tell me who will be training her?

Me:I will

Ty:(laughing)You joking right?

Me:No I'm dead serious

Ndoni:What's wrong with having Ben as a trainer?

Ty:He is rough and hardcore baby I don't think

Sam will be able to handle him

Ndoni:Maybe he is going to be a softy towards her after all he is her husband

Ty:Let's wait and hear when Sam has him as her trainer,she is going to ask for someone else

Me:Look at Biza

Ndoni:Don't tell me you trained,like Biza knows his stuff

Me:I actually did

Ndoni:When Pea is here I want you to train me

Me:(laughing)Be careful for what you wish for,anyways let's get to business

Ndoni:Are we starting without Sam?

Me:I will fill her in a long the way I think she wants to spend her last minutes with the kids

Ty:Which is totally understandable

.

.

Ben:So there has been a car which has been following us

Ty:You talking about the one which is part three houses away from here,a black BMW i300

Me:That's the one

Ty:How doubt are they moving on

Me:The are following we us and I don't want them to know about the secret warehouse

Ndoni:So what's the plan?

Me:You guys need to take us to the airport

Ndoni:Or I can pretend as if Pea is coming in that way we can all take the direction to the hospital and lose them along the way

Ty:We need Biza to wait for you at the basement while we create a diversion for them

Me:Let's do this John and Shanell are already on their way to the warehouse

Ndoni:WHAT....SO I'M MISSING OUT ON THE ACTION

Me:(laughing)You love action to much  
Ndoni,umh let me go and spend time with the kids

Ty:When you ready let us know

Me:Thanks

Ndoni:Let's start acting TYRESE I want to make sure that this is all real

.

.

Sam spent some time with the kids,Sam couldn't believe that she will be away from her kids for the next week,this is probably going to be the longest weekend of her life,even though she studied far away from home but still this was nothing compared to how she was feeling at the moment,no matter how hard she tired to shake it but there was this feeling that it's



possible that this is the last time she will see her family again,that it is the last time seeing them all

.

.

Thando:Mommy why are you crying you are going to make me cry

Ella:Yes Auntie you are making us all sad

Travis:Is everything okay auntie you know what will make you happy

Sam:(shaking her head)

Them:Hugs and kisses

Ella:Come on everyone let's make auntie feel better

.

.

The kids ran towards her each giving her a hug and kisses,Mila on the other hand was wetting

his mother face with wet kisses

Travis:And how is Auntie now?

Sam:(smiling)Much better baby....in fact thank you all for making me feel better

Ella:See we told you that hugs and kisses will make you feel better

Sam:I love you all my babies

Them:We love you too

[07/05, 20:54] W: SEASON FINALE

.

.

ONE WEEK LATER

.

.

NOMHLE

.

.

It was now one week and still no news about the triplets,I guess they have finally given up on searching for their kids

I was now getting ready to leave,Tobby managed to get us fake passports and we will be travelling using cars instead of going to the airport for it's high risk

.

.

For the past days Millie has been great help with helping me with my kids,yes you heard me right my kids

.

.

Millie:Morning loviae are you ready to go

She was kissing Iminathi(boy)and the girls I have named them Enzokuhle and Melokuhle

Me:(smiling)Yes we are Auntie

Millie:Don't mean to burst your bubble but he really looks like Benjamin each and every day,he is the exact copy of his father

Me:He is his father after all

Millie:And the girls also look like their mother Sam poor thing wonder how she is holding up,they also have their fathers eyes and lips,I must say it took me some time to see that Benjamin is hot,(baby talking)Yes baby your daddy is one fine man

Me:(irritated)Can you put my baby down,if you have nothing to say please get out my room

Millie:You know since my plan of not getting Ty didn't succeed I think I'm going to let him go now,he really loves that little girl it's a pity that I lost,but not all is lost at least we managed to hurt one of the guys...You know I heard one of the guys telling Toby that both Sam and Ben are no longer alive she has been living with her sister Ndoni and hasn't showed her face out in

a long time and as for Ben no one knows where he is even my baby daddy seems not care about his whereabouts,it's a pity that you killed your sister now she would have had Ben all the herself

Millie:Mm sorry for stepping on your toes,Tobby told me to come and tell you that we will be leaving in 5

Me:Thanks now can you get out of my room

Millie:And who is going to help you with the kids

Me:I will manage

Millie:Yoooooh your mommy is mean  
Iminathi,bye bye babies see you soon

.

.

As soon as she left the room I let out a loud scream making sure not to wake up the girls

If Millie was not Tobby most favourite pet I

would have ended her life,still don't know why she has to come with us on the trip but anyways Toby rules...I'm glad as soon as we cross the boarder I will be freed from them

.

.

We were now waiting for the car to come up

Me:Are we going to use the same car as Toby or is he going to use his?

Millie:We are all using the same car

Me:Where is he?

Millie:He will be joining us very shortly

.

.

Just then Toby walked in,walking as if he owned the place phof he owns it

.

.

Tobby:Ready to go?

Me:Ready as we could be

Tobby:Can't believe I'm going to miss these munchies,I was actually enjoying having them around

Me:You know you can visit any time you want,in fact both of you can

Millie:I thought you were going to say you don't want me any where near them

Me:You are their only auntie after all

Millie:You know spending time with the triplets made me realise on how much I have missed out on Ella and Travis,as soon as I get back from this trip I'm going to be their mother once again

Me:That's good to hear

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

John:They are moving

Me:Do you know where they are heading

John:The coordinates are not clear at the moment,the place they are moving in seems to not have a signal

Me:Can you locate their points though?

John:Yes

Me:Than I guess it's time for us to strike

.

.

Just as I was talking my brother Tyrese walked in before I forget Ndoni gave birth to a bouncing baby girl she was not happy that she lost the



bet she was really hoping that Pea was boy but other than that both her and the baby are doing fine

.

.

Me:(smiling)And what the heck are you doing here,aren't you suppose to be changing diapers?(giving him a hug)

And who is with my little princess?

Ndoni:(laughing)I told you that as soon as Pea is born I will join you

Me:(laughing)Get out of here now come and give me some sugar

John:Isn't Pea a premature?

Ty:That whack doctor actually didn't calculate correctly,in other words he mistakenly gave us the wrong

due date

Me:You are telling me that he couldn't pick that up after all these months

Ndoni:My little pea is fine and healthy and that's all that matters,so tell me where are my sisters?

John:They don't want to talk to us

Me:Silent treatment

Ndoni:What did you do?

Me:Long story,tell them to get ready

Ndoni:Sho boss

.

.

Ty:So what's new?

John:They are heading towards the boarder

Ty:Let's go and get this sucker

John:(smiling)Are you guys ready?

Ty:(smiling)Let this be the night to remember

John:We are retiring

Me:Let's make it cut,guys get the cars ready we got a car to catch

[07/05, 20:57] W: SEASON FINALE

.

.

Ndoni went out to look for her sisters whom she missed so much,as much as she preferred being home with her new born baby but then again she didn't want to miss out on the action for it's possible that it will be her last

.

.

As she was going through the corridors she doesn't to call Carl who was baby sitting together with Shanell older daughter

.

.

Carl:Ndoni is everything okay,are you guys coming back home?

Ndoni:No my love I was just checking on how my little Pea is doing in fact how are the children are you guys coping should I call Bab'Dlamini?

Carl:No we are doing just fine and the kids are behaving which is totally so unlike them and Pea is doing fine...she has been restless today I guess she misses her mommy and daddy

Ndoni:Ooooh now I feel bad for leaving her,look baby I will give you a call later on today

Carl:Okay sis take care...wait before you hang up have you heard anything from mom?

Ndoni:No my love why are you asking is everything okay?

Carl:Everything is fine Sis Ndoni just that it's so unlike her to be quiet,has Bab'Dlamini said

anything?

Ndoni:I'm sure where ever she is she is totally fine now stop worrying and enjoy being a kid,leave the worrying to me okay

Carl:Okay Sis Ndoni...I love you

Ndoni:I love you too baby,send my greetings to everyone and tell them I will call them later on,maybe I will face time with you guys

Carl:Please ask Sis Sam and Sis Shanell to do so too,their boys are missing them so much

Ndoni:I will let them know take care now

.

.

As soon as she dropped the call Shanell came running towards her screaming

.

.

Shanell:(screaming)Oh my goodness you are

really here

Ndoni:You do know that you are heavy right

Shanell:(screaming)So where is Pea,can't wait to meet the little being

Ndoni:Aaaaah I left her at home couldn't come with her here as you can see this place is not good for the baby,so tell me how have you guys been and where is Sam

Shanell:Sam is doing some training,come let's go to her

Ndoni:Before I forget the guys told me to tell you guys to get ready

Shanell:Is it time already,oh my word can't believe that this is happening

Ndoni:Are you ready for this?

Shanell:(smiling)I was born ready but to be honest I'm worried about Sam the past few days she has been acting weird

Ndoni:Have you told Ben about her behaviour?

Shanell:No she has begged me not to say a word to him,but I think that Sam is not coping at all like I feel like it has started to dawn on her that the kittens have been kidnapped

Ndoni:She needs not to worry we are going to bring back her kittens and they are going to be reunited

Shanell:That's not only that Ndoni,Sam has been having sleepless nights and when I ask her about them she just says it nothing where as I can see that something is troubling her,maybe you can get through to her cause she doesn't want to say anything to me

Ndoni:I'm sure it's nothing let's get ready or the guys are going to leave us behined

.

.

On the other hand Nosizwe life was taking a

drastic turn Kaden was breathing down her neck asking for his money since she couldn't deliver

.

.

Gogo:Nosizwe what's going on my baby,ever since you received the call last night you haven't been yourself is everything okay?

.

.

Well Nosizwe received a call from Kaden asking her to pay up or say goodbye to those whom she loves for it's possible she won't live to see the end of this week

Her love for money has landed her into deep waters and there is nothing she can do about that,even her mother doesn't have that kind of money so it's pointless for her to ask her and Ndoni who is her last hope wants nothing to do



with her

.

.

Nosizwe: Everything is fine mama, look why don't you go home I'm sure your husband misses you I think it's time you mend things up between your husband, you know mama I wasn't grateful for what you did for me, like after all I have done you have managed to welcome me with sweet loving arms and for that I am grateful, secondly I would like to say thank you for looking after my daughter, not only did you do that but you actually loved her unconditionally she is the woman she is not because of me but because of what you have done and for that I thank you mama... no amount of words can describe how grateful I am towards you, and lastly thank you for loving me unconditional there were times where you should have walked out away, you even fought with your husband all because of

me but I think it's time you went back to him now,He loves you more than anything I don't want you to lose him all because of me

Gogo:(smiling)You don't know how much it means to me,I am your mother baby a mother never leaves her child no matter what

Nosizwe:I wish I can say the same,you know Ma I have been a bad mother to all my kids,where ever there are I'm sure they are doing so much better without me

Gogo:Don't say that baby I'm sure they miss you just like you miss them

Nosizwe:I'm glad they are not here with me,you know I'm a poison mom and I don't deserve to live,you know I made the one and only man whoever love me poor,I even took away what he loved the most and that is his children for what?

Only because I wanted money,I milked him dry and left him to the dogs,Carl's father really did love me...now I know that I couldn't see his love

than because I didn't love myself(crying)

Gogo:Baby I'm sure you can talk to him,maybe you can fix things with him

Nosizwe:It's already to late ma,y....you should get going ma it's getting late and I don't want you arriving late at home

Gogo:Are you sure that everything is okay  
Nosizwe?

Nosizwe:Yes everything is fine

Gogo:Let me go and pack my things

.

.

After packing everything that belonged to her Gogo who was accompanied by Nosizwe went to the near by stop...as they were waiting for a taxi a random car pulled next Gogo and Nosizwe and a man wearing a masked pulled out a gun and shoot Nosizwe twice in her chest,the car speed off living Gogo screaming

out for someone to help her

.

.

Gogo:(screaming)Nosizwe open your eyes baby  
please don't do this

Nosizwe:I..I

Gogo:Don't say anything Nosizwe,somebody  
help me

Nosizwe:I...I love...you..ma..ma a...nd tell  
the..kids that....I...am...sorry

.

.

With Nosizwe trying to keep her eyes she finally  
gave in,and Gogo knew than that her one and  
only daughter was gone,the ambulance arrived  
15 mins later with people crowding the place  
where Nosizwe was laying in

Paramedic 1:Can you please move

Gogo:She's already gone

Paramedic 1:Ma let's first check if she doesn't have a pulse than we will conclude there after

Gogo:Time of death 15:00 pm 16 April 2017

After saying that she fainted

.

.

On the other hand Toby and the ladies were slowly approaching the boarder gate when they felt the car stopping

.

.

Toby:What's going on,why are we stopping?

Mageshe:They seems to be a road block boss

Toby:DON'T JUST STAND THERE GO AND FIND OUT WHAT'S GOING ON

Millie:Let me stretch my legs so long

Nomhle:Can we get moving my babies are starting to get restless

Millie:They have been cooped up in their car seats no wonder they are restless

As they were busy talking Mageshe came back but this time he was walking with someone

Nomhle:That must be the cop

.

.

Mageshe:Boooo....sssssooooo

Tobby:What's going on here?

Just then the cop who was accompanying Mageshe removed his cap

Tobby:(shocked)VI...LAKAZI

Millie:Wh....ats go...ing on here?

Ben:(smiling)Now I want you all to start getting out of the car and don't bother calling your guys they are dead

Tobby:Bu...ut how did you?

Ben:(smiling)They don't call me Vilakazi for nothing,now where the heck are the guys...let the party being

.

.

NOT EDITED

[07/05, 21:02] W: FINALE:PART ONE

.

.

The crew was now approaching where Ben was standing,as soon the car stopped Sam followed by her sisters quickly got out of the car,with both John and Tyrese shocked

.

.

John:Seems like your wife is fired up man

Ty:(laughing)It seems all of them are fired up

John:(laughing)Look at how chilled Ben is I thought he was lying when he said he was going to stop them alone

Ty:You know I could have also done it without you guys

John:(laughing)Let's go and meet this crazy physco brother of yours,you know I can't wait to have fun with him,I actually feel sorry for you cause you are going to be experiencing his pain

Ty:Guess it's a price I will have to pay man,you know I really thought that Bobby would change but then again a leopard never changes it's spots

John:And Bobby will never learn brother

Ty:It's better for him to die

.

.



Sam:(tearing up)Where are my babies,are they okay?

Nomhle:(laughing)Heeeeh in case you didn't know they are my kids

Ndoni:Whatever you smoking is clearly making you mad

Shanell:Are you sure you are mentally stable  
Nomhle

Ndoni:How do you know her?

Shanell:She is Bonnie older sister

Ben:Yes my love they are perfectly fine

Sam just broke down and cried her lungs out,Ndoni and Shanell took the kittens out of the car while Ben is attending to his wife,seeing her like that tore his heart into pieces,he vowed that the only tears that Sam will cry are tears of joy instead the opposite was happening

Sam:I...I...I'm just hap..ppy that they are alive that's all(crying)

Ben:It's okay my love I'm sorry that you had to go through this and this is all my fault

Sam:No no no it's not you didn't know that this kind of thing was going to happen,I just want to say thank you for bringing back our kids safe from harm and that nothing is wrong with them,I thought that we were going to find them dead,but hearing their giggles,and seeing their beautiful faces has made me alive again,sorry for shutting you out I know you have been giving me a lot of space but to be honest my love I miss you,I want my husband back

Ben:And I miss you too my love(kissing her)

Ty:Okay guys we know you want to be lovey and dovey but this is not the place

Ben:Go and spend some time with the kittens

Sam:I love you

Ben:I love you too

John:Ncooh

.

.

Sam made her way to the other car where her kids were, she heard them giggling and laughing at that moment she was grateful that they were safely found

Ndoni: Aren't you a cutie (baby talking), yes you baby my little Izzy, Aunty missed you

Zen was peacefully sleeping on Shanell arms well Nizzy was kicking her little chubby legs

Sam: Thank you guys

Ndoni: Don't sweat it sweet I know you would have done the same for us

Shanell: That's true love, we are family and that's what family does we stick together no matter what might happen

Sam: I know for the past few days I have been cracky and I'm totally sorry about that

Shanell:It's totally understandable love,all of that is in past now,we have the kittens

Sam:I love you guys

Shanell and Ndoni:We love you too

Sam:You guys can go and join the guys I will manage her

Ndoni:Are you sure love?

Shanell:We don't mind helping you

Sam:I know you both want to be part of the action now go on I will manage,at least Zen is sleeping and these little diva's will sleep shortly and of cause I want to have some one on one with my girls

Ndoni:Don't worry Sammy we will bring you the juicy details love

.

.

Ndoni and Shanell quickly went to where the

guys were standing

.

.

Ndoni:So when are we torturing them?

Millie:Please let me go....It was Nomhle and Bonnie who kidnapped the triplets,but sadly Bonnie was shot dead by her own sister in cold blood

Nomhle:(laughing)Oh so now we are spilling each others dirty secrets huh okay so how about you tell them all that you and Toby were actually planning on selling Ndoni to a pimp

Ty:WHAT?

Nomhle:Oh that's not all dear Tyrese,how about you both tell them that you actually wanted to bring them down one by one,Toby tell John how you wanted to sell Stacy to a child molester and how you wanted to have Shanell raped

John:YOU WANTED TO SELL MY DAUGHTER  
TOBBY,YOU WANTED TO HAVE MY WIFE  
RAPED HOW SICK ARE YOU MAN

Nomhle:That's not all,how about you both tell  
them that you actually wanted help Bonnie to  
get back with Ben,you actually wanted Ben to  
get divorced with Sam,how about you tell them  
that you helped me with the fake passports and  
that you were willing for me to run away with  
the triplets huh,you both don't have anything to  
say now...All I wanted was to hurt you Ben the  
very same way you hurted Bonnie,you slept with  
her,you used her Ben

Ben:You talking about the very same sister you  
killed in cold blood,and for the last time since  
you and your late sister couldn't get it through  
your thick skulls Imma say this for the last time

"WHAT HAPPENED BETWEEN ME AND BONNIE  
WAS A MISTAKE,NOTHING BUT A MISTAKE"

Ndoni:I still don't understand why we are still

engaging in a conversation with these things

Shanell:After all they wanted to hurts us,what makes me more angry is that fact that you wanted to hurt my baby,and for one I am going to show you how crazy a mother can be,since you guys are so slow I want them in the warehouse in 10 minutes I want to teach Toby a lesson

Ben:(laughing)You know we made a truce with Toby and we asked him kindly not to involve our families in this

John:But Toby Toby never listens he decided to mess with the big boys once again

Ty:And this time he involved our families in the mix

Ben:Why don't we do a remix gents

Shanell:Why are you leaving us behind Benjamin,we also want to have fun with them

.

.

Sam:You know Toby what Shanell just said is very true you don't mess with a mother and all of you have provoked me not only did you keep me away from my kids for a week but you also planned to hurt my loved ones,since you are good in hurting our loved ones I have a surprise for you Toby,to you want to know what it is?(smiling)

Ben:Yima whoo yima whoo(hold up)where is Sam my loving wife,and where are the kittens?

Sam:Biza and Shawn are watching them I couldn't miss out on the action

Sam:So as I was saying my husband happens to own some bull dogs and they happen to be hungry isn't that right baby?

.

.

She was now standing next to her husband,who



was now standing behind her, watching her as she spoke with so much authority and confidence he never knew that Sam had it in her for a matter of fact, it seems like the bad Sam has been laying low all this time

.

.

Sam:Baby?

Ben:Yes..yes that's true my love

Sam:And they are hungry for human flesh right, I have an idea though

Ndoni:Is it bad, like bad bad?

Sam:You going to love it what better way to break a man than hurting those he love, Toby my husband told me that you have a lovely wife and a beautiful daughter who looks like my niece Ella

Shanell:I think I'm going to like where this is going...I need some popcorn

Ndoni:Thetha mama wamwele(speak it out)

Sam:Why don't we feed little Toby to the doctors

Shanell:And let daddy dearest watch his little princess die in front of his eyes

Ndoni:(smiling)I heard that pink is her favourite colour,Mmmmh and then there is the wife she is a beauty I must say..you are going to watch her burn alive while we torch her alive,you are going to smell her flesh burn and then you are all going to eat her burnt flesh

Ty:Sies

John:Damn you guys are hardcore

.

.

Shanell:Husbands load them up we want to do the honors,talking to them is just a waste of time

Ndoni:(smiling)Theory time is over,it's time to do the practicals

Ben:(laughing)It is said that practicals carry the most marks

Tobby:(crying)Please spare my family from this...They are innocent....you want me right then have me but please let them go

Ndoni:You should have thought about that the moment you started scheming against us

Millie:Please don't do this

Nomhle:You think that this is going to scare me

Ndoni:When we get to the warehouse I want to use you as an explain

.

.

With that being said ladies walked away,with their husbands following them,the hostages were placed in a van with Millie crying out loud

.

.

## AT THE WARE HOUSE

.

.

Sam together with Ben went to put the kittens to sleep...Ben also wanted to bond with his family more than anything,while the others were placing Nomhle on the chair with Toby and Millie both strapped on the chairs watching what was about to unfold before their eyes.Millie couldn't stop crying for she knew her end was near mean while Ndoni is the one who is going to do the honors of breaking Nomhle,the rest of the gang were watching with John and Tyrese sipping some whiskey and Shanell was drinking some red wine

.

.

Ndoni went to Nomhle who was laughing

Ndoni:We will see who will be laughing

last

Ty:Show me bbe what you are made off

.

.

Ndoni brought some acid together with a knife

Ndoni:Do you know what this is?

Nomhle just spite on her face

Ndoni:Oh you want to play dirty I can play dirty too

.

.

She then started cutting Nomhle toes on her right foot,her loud cry filled the room,Ndoni then placed the toes in the plate and poured the acid on her now cutted foot

Ndoni:The acid that I have poured is slowly going to eat your flesh,as you know most acids eat the flesh quickly but this one is going to take it's time

Nomhle:I...im sor....rry

Ndoni:Oh baby this is only the beginning  
njena(smiling)

.

.

NOT EDITED

[07/05, 21:03] W: FINALE:PART TWO(CROP TOP)

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

I was now laying in bed with the kittens in the middle,they were wide awake one would swear they were not sleeping a few minutes ago

.

.

Me:What did you feed them?

Sam:(laughing)Nothing,maybe they no that there are with mommy and daddy

Ben:Zen is going to be a mommy boys

Sam:No he's not,can't believe that we have three girls

Me:That means more lobola for us my love

Sam:Oooo is it so you telling me that you want them to get married?

Ben:They will do no such,all of my princesses will stay at home,the only time they will get married is when I'm no more

Sam:Mmmmh okay

.

.

Me:Baby?

Sam:Yes my love?

Me:We're you serious when you said you were going to feed Toby's daughter to the dogs and burn his wife?

Sam:I was just playing mind games with him,he is the one at fault not his wife or daughter,we are not going to hurt innocent people

Me:For a moment I thought you were serious

Sam:No I don't want blood on my hands especially innocent blood

[07/05, 21:03] W: FINALE PART ONE

.

.

BENJAMIN



.

.

Voice:Luke 17:4

'If he sins against you seven times in a day,and seven times comes back to you and says "I repent" forgive him'

Voice:Ephesians 4:32

"Forgive one another,just as in Chirist God forgave you"

Voice:You know what to do Benjamin

Me:But how can I do this after what they have done to my family

Voice:It's so sad that I forgave you for what you have done,tell me Benjamin how many times have you sinned against me,tell me Benjamin how many lives have you took out of this earth,the blood you have spilled and yet when you came to me I forgave you

Me:But...

Voice:Yet you are still standing here,didn't you get your children,aren't they safe with no single hair tread missing from them,then why are you allowing this to happen to my children,even though they go astray from me but still they are still my children,do you think I can't hear their cries

Me:You have...forgive me Lord

Voice:Then you know what to do,everyone deserves a second chance Benjamin,you are carrying so much hate in your heart it's time to let go now son

Me:What are you talking about?

Voice:I see everything and I know what your father did to your mother

Me:Why did you allow it happen then?

Where were you when my mother cried herself to sleep

Voice:I was there and I am still Am,that was something that both your mother had to go through but of your mother has forgiven your father than what's stopping you

Me:It's not easy

Voice:Life is never easy but I will show you the way,just trust me and stop trying to do this on your own

.

.

Sam:Baby,baby Vilakazi vuka myeni wam(wake up my husband)

Sam:It's a dream wake up my husband

.

.

I could hear Sam voice but I couldn't move my body

.

.

Me:What's going on,why can't respond,where am I?

Voice:I will only let go until you forgive them all,including your father,sister and aunts

.

.

I could hear Sam crying,begging me to wake up

Voice:Your cause of death will be a heart attack

.

.

Hearing my wife's cry really pierced my heart,the kittens started crying too

.

.

Sam:(crying)Benjamin don't do this to me,please Lord don't do this

.

.

Me:I will do it,I will do it I promise

.

.

All of a sudden it felt like life came back into my body.I started coughing

Sam:Baby(crying)

Me:It's okay my love,I'm here don't worry

Sam:I thought we have lost you

Me:I'm not going anywhere,I need to stop all of this

Sam:What are you talking about my love?

Me:We should let them go baby,if God is able to forgive us for our sins than who are we to hold grudges against those who sin or do wrong against us,now I understand when you say that forgiveness is all about forgiving someone with

out them asking for it

Sam:You should go out there before it's too late  
my love

.

.

Benjamin quickly went to where the others were  
being handle,when he got there he could not  
believe...Nomhle toes were cutted off and she  
was crying in agony

.

.

Voice:I will turn your heart of stone into a heart  
of flesh

Benjamin:Why am I feeling like this?

Voice:You are now feeling my pain

Benjamin:I can't take this anymore

Voice:Then do what is right

.

.

Benjamin:Guys just stop all of this

Ndoni:Are you being for real,the party has just started

Benjamin:Biza call an ambulance for Nomhle,Ndoni stop what you are doing the party is over

Tyrese:What's going on Bro

Benjamin:Guys Untie them,make sure that you give Nomhle some pain killers,take both Millie and Toby to the lounge and give them some sugar water it will calm them down

Biza:Vilakazi,there is no signal

Benjamin:Get my car ready I will take her to the hospital

Sam:Get me some towels and any antiseptic

Biza:Will Detol work ma

Sam:Yes

Benjamin:Don't forget the gloves,babe are you going to manage

Sam:I will only be able to stop the bleeding,even though I can't save her toes,Dylan can you go and watch the kittens please

Dylan:Yes ma'am

Benjamin:Do the best to keep her alive

Ndoni:Am I dreaming can someone bring me back on earth

Benjamin:Everyone in the lounge

.

.

Everyone was in the lounge expect for Sam

.

.

Tobby and Millie were still shaking



.

.

Tyrese:Can you tell us what's going on  
Benjamin

Benjamin:Tobby I'm sorry for what happened  
back there man,you are free to go

[07/05, 21:04] W: FINALE

.

.

Ndoni:Can someone please tell me what's going  
on,not so long ago we were on the same page  
then why the sudden change of heart

Ben:This is not you Ndoni even you Shanell this  
whole gangster wife thing is not you guys

Ben:I know that this is going to sound weird and  
crazy but here goes nothing,well I was taking a  
nap God spoke to me about everything

Tyrese:Since when do you talk to God,what's up

with this new attitude

John:You are starting to freak us out

Tyrese:(laughing)I'm pretty sure he is going to start laying hands on us

Ben:Yeah Yeah moving on in case you didn't know God talks with us everyday just that we are too busy to hear His voice,moving on He actually showed me the power of forgiveness,forgiveness is not only a word but actually it's an action that one needs to do...In most cases we actually forgive those who ask for forgiveness and those who don't we hold grudges against them simply because they did not admit their wrongs

How many times have we wrong those close to us without admitting our wrongs,without asking for forgiveness and the biggest of all is,how many times have we sinned against God and even so He still forgives us.

Sam:The reason why we are still here is not

because of what we did, but it's because of what Jesus did on the cross for us, you are still breathing all because of His grace now tell me why should we continue living a life which is so displeasing to God, we have all sinned and we all fall short of His glory but still even so He still welcomes us as His children, when we acknowledge our mistakes He forgives us

Ben: Who are we to take revenge on them yes they may have kidnapped the kittens but all is good now let's just let them go guys it's not worth it

Tyrese: You know after all we want to leave this life then what better way than to say goodbye to it in a good way, can you ladies please excuse us for a minute you can take Millie with you, Toby you are staying behind

.

.

Even though Ndoni wanted to protest Sam gave

her the eye,which showed that she should do as her husband is saying

Millie was still shaking from all the shock

.

.

Shanell:How is Nomhle?

Sam:We managed to stabilise her even though she has lost a lot of blood I'm sure they are already attending to her at the hospital

Ndoni:Millie you really need to stop shaking ingathi uyikuku enesifo(you shaking like a sick chicken)

Sam:(laughing)Ndoni play nice she is still in shock after all you showed them flames

Ndoni:You know I don't mind teaching her a lesson or

two

Shanell:I will be your assistance this time,I was

thinking we can take out her eye

Ndoni:(laughing)I like that

Millie started crying once again

Tyrese:(shouting)Ndoni stop it

Ndoni:(laughing)I was just playing Tyrese...I'm just pulling your leg my love

.

.

Tyrese was looking at his twin a part of him was happy that finally they will be having this talk and another part of him is sad he just didn't like how his twin was

.

.

Tyrese:I'm not going to beat around the bush,why did you kill mom and dad?

Tobby:Because they are not our real parents,John can you please search for Nathan

and Zikhona Lake and please read it out loud

John:Business mogul Nathan Lake and his lovely wife Zikhona Lake were brutally murdered in their home in the Ville Heights.

The suspects are still not known but many suspect the Lakes were targeted by someone close to them.

The lovely couple leaves behind two new born twins boys whom they have just welcomed a few months ago,a source close to the family said that the couple where so happy to be parents

Ben:So you are telling me that you guys are actually mixed race,your mother was Xhosa  
wow

John:You guys got to see this,they have a baby picture of you both while you were still babies

Ben:(laughing)Now I can tell where Travis and Ella got their chubby cheeks

John:(laughing)I bet Tyrese is the one on the left,my man you were one chubby baby...Ndoni needs to see this

Tyrese:(laughing)You guys are really funny you know I just find out that the people I thought are my parents are actually not my parents and you are busy making fun off my baby photo

Ben:Ncoooh man Travis really looks like you both

Tyrese:Are they any relatives left?

Tobby:Gibson killed both families so no we are the only ones left

John:Gibson was heartless man

Tyrese:You know what there is no point in dwelling in the past now,I forgive you little brother regardless of what you have done my love for you hasn't changed even one bit...let's put this all behind us now,there is know point in continuing asking for questions for the people

who are supposed to answer us are no longer living....I'm sorry for not being there when you needed me,I'm sorry for neglecting you all these years I'm sorry for not being an older brother you needed,I'm sorry for turning my back when you needed me the most

Tobby:I'm sorry for each and everything that I have done to you guys,you are all my brothers but I went out and ruined that all

John:Like Tyrese said there is no point in dwelling in the past now we all have made mistakes but what's important is that we learn from them,as you guys know you are the only siblings I have

I never thought that this day would come where we would be reunited once again

Ben:If anyone has a problem with another I think it's best if we talk it out there is no point in keeping quite

Tyrese:We ride together



Ben:We die

John:Brothers for life

Tobby:Nothing can separate us

Ben:Men we really missed that line

John:Glad you finally came to your senses

Tyrese:Let us go home I miss my little Pea

Ben:Can't wait to meet your wife and daughter  
Tobby

Tobby:I'm actually planning on residing this  
side,finally she will meet you all guys

.

.

FEW WEEKS LATER

.

.

TYRESE

.

.

I was looking at my wife feed my little Pea who was growing each and every day, she really looked like Ndoni the only thing she took from me was my eye colour together with hair colour which is naturally blonde

.

.

Ndoni: You know staring is rude Mr Lake

Me: You know I'm still getting used to this new surname Ms Lake

Ndoni: I actually like it, come and take Pea you need to burp her while I get ready

Me: We should try for Pear now

Ndoni: Pea is not even 3 months and already you want another baby and I'm sure she doesn't want you to share you with anyone anytime soon

Me:That's true I'm still shocked that Ella is not showing any signs of sharing me

Ndoni:She has boo boo do you know how much I love you Mr Lake

Me:(smiling)You don't say it all the time Ms Lake,let me go and give your sister Pea maybe we can continue this in the shower

Ndoni:(laughing)Hahahaha maybe some other time,the twins are going to come running into the room and you know they are going to ask us questions about why we are taking a shower together

Me:Worth the try though maybe we can start working on Pear and Apple

Ndoni:What makes you think we will have twins this time around

Me:Cause your man is a twin and it's high time we had little kittens crawling around the house

Ndoni:Maybe when Pea is three or two than we

can start trying

Me:It's a deal this time I have a feeling we are going to have boys

Ndoni:My bet is that we are going to have a girl or girls...Thank you for being a loving husband especially now that Gogo wants nothing to do with me,Sam or Carl she still blames me for what happened to Nosizwe

I'm just glad that Bab'Dlamin is in our lives and that he is going to be visiting us very soon,I just love my dad speaking of which I need to call him,I'm sure that he is talking with Sam....so thank you my love for not leaving my side and also for accepting my siblings

Me:And I love you too,now come on get ready we don't want to be late you know how Toby is when it comes to time

Ndoni:Can you check if the kids are ready yet

.

.

BENJAMIN

.

.

Me:Guys we need to get going we can't be late

.

.

The kittens were sleeping peacefully in their car seats my babies were growing beautiful each and every day,Zenkosi was looking like me and the girl's just look like me and at the same time like Sam

.

.

Mila came down

.

.

Me:Where is your mom and sister?

Mila:Mommy putting paint(make up)

Me:(shouting)I'm leaving you guys behined

Thando:Daddy can you please wait we nearly done

Sam:Put the kids in their seats please

.

.

After a while my wife and daughter finally walked out looking beautiful,Thando was wearing her floral dressed which matched with Sam long floral skirt paired of with a black lacy crop top

Thando had pigtails and Sam let her hair down

.

.

Me:You really look good my favourite ladies not forgetting Nizzy and Izzy

Thando: Thank you daddy can we go now I'm sure Ella and Drew are waiting for me

Me: Says the young lady who took forever

.

.

Me: Thank you for loving me, thank you for accepting me for who I am, you didn't change me but you embraced me.

You showed me that there is life, you grounded me and humbled me but mostly you introduced me to God the Author and the Maker of all things thank you for making me know Him.

Thank you for being the mother to my children and I'm hoping in the near future we will try again

Sam: (laughing) Not happening

Me: Thank you for loving me Sam unconditional, thank you for teaching me how to forgive my relationship with my father is slowly

but surely becoming what it used to be in fact even better,not to mention how I now love my sister unconditional without thinking she is the child who is a product of my father's affair...Thank you for teaching me the value of relationships

Sam:I love you too Vilakazi wam but let all the glory go to God He is the one who made all these things come to pass

Me:I know my love but you also played a part thank you

Sam:No thank you,now come on I'm sure the others are waiting for us

Me:I want us to make a grand entrance

Sam:I'm sure Tyrese,John and Toby are thinking the same thing

.

.

The bothers and wives were coming all together



to welcome Toby wife and daughter into the family,the kids were playing with each other and the wives were talking like sister's even Carl was among them,Toby wife even cried when she saw the love that the sister's were giving her,after so many years of praying for reconciliation between her husband and brothers she finally knows how it feels to be in a family,even her daughter was having so much fun with her cousins

.

.

Toby:Not so long ago me and my wife were the only family that we had for each other not to mention that our daughter had no one other than us,now seeing her smiling and running makes me think how important family is

Ndoni:The kids are going to have a sleep over tonight,I need my husband all to myself

Carl:(laughing)To much info

Tobby:(smiling)We would love to have them,thank you for all of this...I think my wife would like to say a word or two

Rosina:I just would like to say thank you all for welcoming us..that's all I can say

Shanell:We love you(shouting)

Rosina:And I love you too

.

.

The family continued celebrate with each other giving each other love

.

.

There is nothing more important than family,whether blood related or not but family is important,the world would be a bad place if we didn't love or forgive one another,if Jesus is able to forgive than what is stopping

us,regardless of what they have done forgive them,they have wronged you called you names,caused you pain you know the sad part is that you are holding on to what that person did or what they have done,you are not living your life to the fullest because you keep on replaying what they did or said,I know it's not easy but take the first step of letting go and forgive them,take the first step with God trust Him don't do it on your strength allow Him to guide your healing

.

.

We can't change the past but we can certainly change the present,your yesterday may have been bad but your today and tomorrow is looking better

.

.

<<THE END>>